

Jason stop."

I whined as my crush attacked kisses on my neck as we sat on his bed. I call him just my crush. Because I like him, but I'm not his girl friend, weird right? We met a few weeks ago on the first day of school, his game made me fall for him along with his striking looks. He's stands to about 5'9, has warm mocha colored skin, with the prettiest hazel eyes, they're mesmerizing as soon as you glance your own eyes into them. Maybe that's what made me fall for him.115

He's been begging me to come to his house and chill with him. I knew chilling was nothing less on his mind, he had bigger plans for me. I'm suppose to be at home eating and watching cartoons but instead I'm being pressured into having sex, I'm only fifteen and I know for a fact that I'm not ready for this shit.109

"Jason I said stop!" I continued to ask him to stop. But to me it seemed like he wouldn't take no for an answer.5

"No baby, I want to kiss you. Calm down."63

Physically, this didn't feel bad at all; all day my panties have been soaked and it's all so new to me. Butterflies have been tingling in my stomach, because his touch had so much power. Him pecking on my neck over and over put me on edge, his warm breath blowing against my skin was a feeling I didn't want to end.<sup>2</sup>

However, mentally I knew this was wrong. Lying to my parent about my whereabouts saddened my heart, they put all of their trust in me and here I am out with a boy that I'm not even for sure he fully likes me. As good as the foreplay felt I knew this wasn't for.<sup>5</sup>

"No. Stop." I said quickly as I pushed his body off of mine and took a deep breath. I stared down at the peach colored carpet and covered my face. Tears instantly begin to swell up in my eyelids then fall into the palm in hands. He tried to remove my hands from my face but I was embarrassed to have him see my cry.<sup>22</sup>

"What's wrong?" He questions in what seemed to be a worried tone.<sup>1</sup>

"I don't want to do this, what if I get pregnant?" I asked him with my hands still on my face and word muffled.<sup>4</sup>

He wraps his arm around and kisses my cheek. "When I get ready to cum, I'ma pull out fast. I promise." He says in a sincere tone.<sup>280</sup>

"Jason, I don't want to do this. Can you please walk me home?"

"Why you don't want do it?"<sup>75</sup>

I take my hands from off my face and give him a blank expression, staring at him as if he's the stupidest man I ever met in history. "You don't have a condom. On top of that I'm fifteen and you're fourteen, If I do get pregnant how are you going to take care of me. And I don't want my parents to hurt me just take me home."<sup>247</sup>

"Babe.....calm down, alright. I'm gonna pull out. We're just alike, you know that? I swear I'm nervous just like you, you would be my first time." He admits,124

I bite on my lip and swallow hard. Could I really be the only girl he's only been with? "You're lying Jason." I look into his hazel eyes, and watch as he shakes his "no".44

"I'm serious. I'm a virgin. Look, I know you're scared. But you don't have to be scared with me..." He kisses my lips. "I'ma take care of you, I love you." He says, and my heart drops into my stomach. I then start looking at him for a good few moments and out of nowhere I take it upon myself to land my lips on to his. We kiss each other with passion, then he licks his lip and smirk and let out a light chuckle.126

"You gon' do something for me?" He stands in front of me, while positioning himself in between my legs then he wipe my tears away with his rough hands.37

"What do you want me to do?" I wrap my hands around his waist and looks up to get a good glance at his face.

"Give me head." He simply states. My eyes wander to the wall as my heart begins race through my chest. I'm a virgin and the first thing he asks me to do is that.125

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

Valentine's Day : CUPID'S MATCH BOOK 2 by LEPalphreyman

Valentine's Day : CUPID'S MATCH BOOK 2

6.9M

371K

\*CUPID'S MATCH BOOK 2\* FIRST DRAFT Lila receives an ominous Valentine's Day card. Cupid & Cal are keeping a dark secret. Fate is being interfered with. And a sadistic, a...

A lie in church. TO BE PUBLISHED by xona2o18

A lie in church. TO BE PUBLISHED

23.5M

165K

SAMPLE Highest rank[#1 in Billionaire] [#1 in youngadult] [#1 in NewAdult] [#1 in Fiction] STA..

Psyche's Heart : CUPID'S MATCH BOOK 3 by LEPalphreyman

Psyche's Heart : CUPID'S MATCH BOOK 3

2.8M

186K

\*CUPID'S MATCH BOOK 3\* FIRST DRAFT For the third time, follow Lila into a world of cupids, arrows, betrayal, and love, in the Watty award winning series with over 50 mil...

Ex-Husband Turned Boss by deetronite

Ex-Husband Turned Boss

7.9M

268K

When Aubrey Goldstein got divorced, her life made a complete 180. Now she's 29, broke and unemployed. It seemed like her life was getting worse until she encountered her...

DEVILS INC. by LEPalphreyman

DEVILS INC.

872K

14.4K

[Now published!] Snarky Angels. Bad boy Omens. Dangerous Demons. And a deal with the Devil. -- The past twenty-four hours have been pretty weird for pre-law student Rach...

ONYX(unedited;1st draft) by Myqueens31

ONYX(unedited;1st draft)

1.6M

68.8K

"I don't want you either." I murmur, knowing he'd hear me. He did, and his body tensed, his hands balling at his sides. Of course, I was lying and of course I...

Cupid's Match | Wattpad Books Edition by LEPalphreyman

Paid Stories Badge

Paid Story

Cupid's Match | Wattpad Books Edition

578K

18K

He's mythologically hot, a little bit wicked, almost 100%



immortal. And he'll hit you right in the heart . . . --- Lila Black doesn't believe in matchmaking, let alone s...

"I never did that before." I say in a quiet tone. He bites on his lip and nods his head in understanding. Then he unbuckles his belt and pulls down his pants, along with his boxers but he only pulled it half way down. His hard member was now revealed and I begin to get the shakes. I never seen a penis before so I was shocked, I didn't know what this was gonna come to. He comes closer to me and lifts up my chin.57

"You don't have to be scared baby just do it." He says while holding onto his penis. For some odd reason, I feel like I got nervous to the point I had no control over my current actions. I grabbed his penis and slowly then put it in my mouth, doing what I thought was right.94

"I love you." He tells me again.55

\*\*\*\*

"Jason! Please take it out, it hurts!" I tell him as I sob, my legs was in the air and he was currently trying to force himself into me, he rubs his face in frustration and then give me an evil glare that made me shook.74

"Why are you being so difficult, do you want to be with me or not?" He says with pitiless in his tone, his facial expression made me believe that he was mad at me. The last thing that I would want to do is make him angry. I rub his tone abs and shrug.34

"Y-yes I want to be with you."

"Then stop acting like a baby." He frowns.26

"I'm sorry Daddy." I call him that, because he told me that's what he wanted to be called while we were in bed, anything to please him I will do. "Can you kiss me first?" I asked.170

He then lays on top, then kisses my forehead then trails to my lips. His tongue asks to approach mine and we begin to

french kiss. I was so lost into it that I screamed once he shoved his manhood in me by surprise.<sup>14</sup>

"Ah! Why would you do that Jason?! I wasn't ready! Oh my God, I think you ripped something." I cry out and tears leave my eyes.<sup>71</sup>

"I didn't rip anything Keila." He chuckles. "Stop crying baby, daddy got you."<sup>111</sup>

He slowly grinds inside me and I wince pain with every stroke; then after awhile it doesn't hurt as much it actually starts to feel very pleasurable, that I begin moaning.<sup>2</sup>

"I love you Keila." He whispers in my ear and I go insane.<sup>39</sup>

"You do?!" I moan.

"Yea, I love you." He says as he kisses my earlobe<sup>1</sup>

3 Months Later<sup>1</sup>

"Ms.Amber, I just feel like he doesn't care about me. Like he's being wish washy, he's been talking to other girls and I'm not sure how I should feel about it? I feel like he doesn't like me anymore and...I don't know Ms,Amber I just..I don't know." I expressed to my school counselor, I've been having problems lately and practically stressing over Jason. He's been ignoring me, he won't call me, I can't catch him in the halls, I've been confused about a lot of things, So I decided to come to Ms, Amber because to me she's the coolest woman in the school. She's always helping out with young girls and their problems. I surely need her to advise me.64

"makeila , is he your first?" She asks, throwing me off guard. I wasn't ready to answer and wondered how she figured it out. I gave her black expression and nodded my head slowly as tears rushed out of my eyes. "

Yes!" I sob

She uses the wheels on the bottom of her chair and she

slides over to me, she reaches over my head to grab the kleenex, then she hands it to me. "I knew it, that's why you feel this way. I'm not shaming you at all, but since you gave him what he wanted he doesn't want anything to do with you."33

"But he said he loved me." My son grows louder. And she sits beside and rest my head on her chest, while stroking my hair.11

"I'm pregnant Ms.Amber! And he won't talk to me! Please don't tell anyone."216

"I have to tell your parents and his Keila." She explains.1

"No! Please don't, keep it a secret please!" I beg her.

"Oh my gosh." She mumbles in disbelief. "Do you want to talk to him." She questions. I nod my head yes in response.

\*\*\*\*

Ms.Amber, called Jason out of his class so he could come down and I can finally have an conversation with him. He entered the room and the first thing he did was sigh and shake his head. "I swear I didn't do anything to her." He tells her in a irritated tone.<sup>24</sup>

"She just wants to talk to you Jason, can you be willing to listen to her." She ask as she rubs his shoulder.

"Whatever dog." He mumbles and she nods at me the exits the room; allowing us to have to some privacy,<sup>17</sup>

"What do you want?" He stares at me.

"Why have you been ignoring me?" I ask him, his eyes wanders around the room and they finally fall back on me.

"I mean what is there to talk about with you." He extends his hands and folds his lips.<sup>14</sup>

"I thought I was your girl friend Jace."

"I don't see why, because I never told you that."44

"Yes you did and you said you loved,"

He mugs me and lick his lips as he shakes his head. "Now you know damn well I never told you I love you, so stop with all that emotional shit. I never said that."124

"Yes you did!" I jumped out of my seat and fold my arms across my chest. I didn't know if he had a bad memory or was just acting brand new. Whatever was going on I didn't like it. He looks down at the ground and rubs his eyes as if he's annoyed.

"What do you want from me."

"I'm pregnant."+

"Let me get out of here, cause you're lying." He says to me as he turns around and open the door.61

"Jason!"

"I'm fourteen and you talkin bout baby, I'm done." He walks out.109

"Jason!" I cry out for him. "I need you."

Aabria Jailyn Randall! You better be up!" I yelled after my four-year-old daughter, as I stood in front of the bathroom mirror and unraveled the Bantu knots in my hair; rushing because I had to be at work in less than an hour.57

"But mommy you not ready." She stands in the bathroom doorway with her arms folded across her chest, her wild



poofy hair was hanging freely all over her head, she looked adorable. I chuckled and eyed her.<sup>10</sup>

"You getting' smart with me miss thang?" I questioned in sassy tone as I roll my neck, causing her roar into laughter.

"No!" She giggles. "My birthday tomorrow?"

"Yes, Ma'am! You will be five years old!" I say with a hint of excitement as I separate my curls, being sure their not too close together.<sup>9</sup>

"Yay!"

"Go put on those clothes that I put on your bed baby," I tell her.

"Alright."

After ten minutes I put the finishing touches on my hair, I smiled while checking out the style in the mirror, it was beyond lovely The twist I did the night before resulted in being a full thick curly afro, my baby hairs were laid down perfectly and all. I gathered up all of my hair products and placed them back into the hall closet.10

Then I went into my room and begin to get dressed into the outfit I picked out the night before, I placed on my black leggings that made my butt look more plumped and round then I put on my wool knitted sweater branded by Ralph Lauren, colored a dark french pink with a purple horse on the right side, the v-neck of it showed off my well-endowed breast, I slipped on my cardy classic uggs that had the same fabric and color is my sweater. I stood in front of the mirror stationed on my wall, my reflection staring back at me told me I was beautiful. I have a short frame, only standing 5'0 and weighing 119 pounds, I have a small waist but somewhat of an hour glass frame. My skin is colored a warm Hershey chocolate, I believe that I am pretty. I admire my beauty even when others don't.47

I have a baby girl to raise, I have to love myself so she can love hers. After placing on my earring and applying a little amount of lipstick. I walk over to my bed and take my phone off the charger, then searching through my contacts for a certain number. I pressed call, waiting for an answer.<sup>4</sup>

"Hello." He answered in jaded tone.

"Jason, it's Makeila." I tell him as I hug the phone more on my ear.<sup>15</sup>

"What?"

"Your daughter birthday is tomorrow and I'm taking her to this small play land near LA, it would nice if you could come and even buy her a gift. She'll like that. She wants to see you, it's been a year since she saw you. ." I explain to him, hoping that he wouldn't be a total ass hole about it and would just say he'll come without any trouble or excuses.<sup>13</sup>

"Imma be busy and I ain't got no money. You should've told me sooner." He says.107

"Jason comes on, it's her fifth birthday. You don't have to get her a gift, you seeing her is enough." I assured him.9

"Nah...I gotta get her something. And since I don't have anything. I can't."14

"Why do you have to be petty about every situation? Do you love your daughter." I ask in a curious tone. I felt the need to know because he always acts like it's a problem to talk to her or come see her.2

"Yeah, I guess." He takes a deep breath. "I gotta go, though. Tell her I said happy birthday, I ain't gon' be able to make it."57

"You know what Jay, you don't have to tell her nothing. You

are such a lazy excuse for a father. You can't even break your back to give her a phone call. It's not like you're busy, you have no job. So I don't see the real problem."24

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔫 🚫 ♂

I hear him mumble words under his breath as if he's annoyed by this whole conversation. "I ain't about to argue with your ass, I gotta go."

"Why are you doing this to us! You have a whole family right here, but you decide to be a deadbeat!" I yell.<sup>51</sup>

"Fuck you Kei I ain't gotta explain myself, bye." He hangs up the phone without a warning. I toss my phone carelessly on the bed and begin to shed tears. It broke my heart that he didn't love me or wanted me, but it scorned me, even more, to know that he doesn't even want to be in his daughter's life. Out of five years, Aabria and him saw each other four times. The first time was a week after I had her she was a preemie so she had to stay in the hospital longer, he didn't even want to hold her his mother had to force him. The second time was her first birthday, he only stayed for an

hour, then the third was last year we met up at a park and he bought a toy that only cost fifty cents.122

I really wanted him to stop playing games and just come into me and my daughter life. But he always makes it clear that he doesn't want us. Leaving me heart broken.64

"Mommy?" I look up to see Aabria's short figure standing in front of me. She seemed to be worried about me. "What's wrong?"

"Nothing baby girl, come sit down so I can braid your hair up real quick." I wipe my eyes, arose from my seating spot so I could gather up a few of her hair items. After ten minutes I was done, styling her hair into two braids, one on the top and one on the bottom. Then we were finally ready to leave.13

\*\*\*\*



"Have a nice day!" I exchange a farewell with the bus driver, as I exit the bus. The California sun beams on my head, but it's still fifty degrees outside; cold as hell. Christmas was just around the corner, and that mean I have to buckle down at work and school, to get all that cash that I can so my baby can have a great holiday. I work at LA fashion district, a small shop where flashy and brand clothes are sold, I also help fix stitching and repair sewing machines. It's not much but it's enough to pay the bills.<sup>12</sup>

And I study fashion at a small community college. I graduated but ended up being a teen a mom in the tenth grade so I was failing all of my classes because I had to take care of Aabria, so my dream of going to LA institute didn't come true because of the result of my GPA being horribly low. I want to come up with tuition money so I can get in, and my fashion designer fantasy can become reality.<sup>13</sup>

I walked into my workplace that had a few anxious customers ready for some service. My best friend Tysis was at the front desk talking extremely fast as she was holding

a conversation with one of the customers. I walked behind her and went to the break room to hang up my coat. Then I made my way back out and went to the other desk and took a seat.

"You guys can come over here if you want!" I called out for the rest of her customers in her line.

A middle aged caucasian woman came into my line and greeted me with a smile. She was quite embellished.

"Hi I'm Mikiela, what can I do for you today?" I asked in a genuine tone as I repositioned myself in my seat.<sup>1</sup>

"Hello dear, I was wondering if you could repair the stitching on these trousers" She passes me the dress pants and I look at them and found absolutely nothing wrong.

"What seems to be the problem with the stitching ma'am."

"Well," She leaned forward as she pushed her glasses more onto her nose and pointed out a section on the pants.

"Here we are, this right here." She showed me a little ass piece of thread that was poking out just a bit. I tried my best not to give her the coldest glare that my face could form. Rich people are full of it.<sup>4</sup>

"Oh yeah, I can fix that for you ma'am." I went into my drawer department and pull out a need and thread. Including a thread ripper. "This would only take a minute, literally."<sup>2</sup>

"Alright." She goes in take a seat and Tysis approaches me.

"I called to see if you and Bri needed a ride. You know Denarro and I would've came and got you." She says referring to her boyfriend. Tysis has been my bestfriend since the eighth grade and she just got with Denarro a year ago. I wasn't to fond with him because he's with that street shit and I don't infiliate with that.<sup>68</sup>

"Nah, yall don't need to drive across town for me. I walked to my mama house and dropped Bri off over there, she going to start picking her up for me everyday." I tell as I concentrate on the hand sewing I was doing.

"It's funny how your ass can afford expensive clothes but not a car." She smirks.<sup>44</sup>

"I've been saving up." I snicker. "You know I gotta catch those sales, but I'm alright for now. Me and Bri don't need a car anyway, we don't go nowhere."<sup>19</sup>

"You still throwing her a birthday party tomorrow." She ask as she pulls one of my curls out it's place gently.

"Yep," I pop the p and smile. "I got her so many gifts and I got her a Hello Kitty cake. She's going to love it, the cake is a red velvet, stawberry shortcake, and vanna mix. That shit costed me thirty five dollars, but girl it looked so damn

good online I had to order it,"<sup>27</sup>

"I'm in that bitch then!" She says quietly so the customers wouldn't witness her being ratchet and out of the ordinary. I laughed and continued stitching.<sup>3</sup>

After a few minutes I sit on my phone since customers really didn't need any assistance. Then out of nowhere Haylei came up to me with a strong mug on her face. Haylei happen to be Jay's other baby mama, the one he chooses over his daughter.<sup>74</sup>

"Why are you calling my man's phone?" She questions with attitude.<sup>6</sup>

I stand up and place my hands on my hip, attention started coming our way telling me that I had to be mature and professional about this current situation. "Haylei, why are you at my job."

She rolls her arms while folding her arms across her chest. "Makayla, why are you calling my man non stop?" She challenged.<sup>11</sup>

"Is every thing okay Kiela?" Tysis ask from her desk, she looked as if she was ready to knock this bitch off her feet. I nodded my head yes giving her confirmation that I had everything under control.

"He doesn't want your ugly ass, so stop fucking calling his phone!" She shouted and clenched my fist together and bit my tounge to keep from lashing off.<sup>11</sup>

"Would you like to go outside and talk about this?"

"No hoe! All I want you to do is stop calling my man, he don't want or that ugly ass little girl that you claim is his!" She screams as she repositioned her purse on her shoulder.<sup>109</sup>

I came from behind the counter and inch toward to her.

"Look, I'm not going to allow you to make me lose my job. I want you to know that your a little ass girl, how dare you come up here and pick a fight with me than insult me by calling out my daughter. I would hit you but I'm to woman enough to even scoot down to your level, and you can say anyhting you want about me but don't let any thing about my daughter fly out of your mouth. Now please leave, before I call the police." I said in genteel tone.<sup>72</sup>

She then turned on her heels and exit the store without saying another word to me.

"You handled that accordingly." Tysis says to me with a wide smirk on her face.

"Sure did, I would've slapped the dog shit out of her ass." A customer who was an older black woman said.<sup>69</sup>

I smiled at the both of them and went back behind my desk. "Everything and everyone doesn't need an important reaction."

## Chapter 3-Held Down+

Zayn9

ring- a- ling- ring- a- ling113

I woke up out of my sleep after hearing my phone ringing uncontrollably, I rolled over to the right side of my bed and grabbed the phone that was under the pillow. It's brand new so I had no clue to answer but I realized it said swipe to answer, I followed that direction and put the phone to my ear.

"Hello?" I said in a groggy tone.

"What up tho nigga?" I heard my cousin goofy voice through the phone.

"Nothin man, I was sleep though. This bed comfortable as



shit, gotta nigga in love and shit." I chuckled.<sup>7</sup>

"That's what the joint do to you, but get up and get dress fam. I got a lil suhin' for you. Be ready in a half hour." He says, I can hear wind blowing through the speakers letting me know he was on the road.

"A'ight."

"Coo fam." He hangs up and I tossed my phone at the end of the bed. I didn't want to get out of my comfort zone that I received from the cozy bed, but I pulled the covers back the slowly got up and stretched my arms wide releasing all the tension in my back side and shoulders. I walked to the bathroom and stripped out of my clothes to get into the shower.

After getting out I dressed myself in plain white t-shirt and baggy True Religions, I went under the bed to get my gym bag and something fell out of it as I lifted it up. I grabbed it from the floor and it was a picture of my younger sister

Leyana. I smiled and slipped it into my pocket. My phone began to ring once it again, I picked it up and answered it on the first ring.<sup>9</sup>

"Wassup B." I asked.

"I'm out in the parking lot fam." He informed to me. I then picked up my pace as I gathered up all of my things.

"Alright I'm on my way out now man."

As I reached the hotel door, I notice the glass was vibrating from the loud ass sounds that came from the BMW that was painted a medallion gold, along with the rims of tires. I placed my fist over my mouth as I chuckled.<sup>5</sup>

"This you nigga?" I questioned.

"Nah Coz, it's you." He then tossed me the keys and I glanced down at them in pride as if was a trophy. "You forreal?"<sup>31</sup>

"Yeah nigga come on, we got places to go." He said as he opened the door to the passenger side, the music was even louder. I took a deep breath and hopped in the driver seat and begin to put the key in the ignition until Bishop stopped me, he turned down the radio a bit and snickered.

"Nah nigga, no need for that." He put the car in drive and pressed a button that magically made the car move slowly.<sup>46</sup>

"Nigga what is this!? This bitch don't need no key!" I was officially astounded.

"Damn the joint held my nigga down to long." He said while roaring in laughter he shook his head as he wiped his forehead.<sup>7</sup>

"Put your foot on the gas nigga." He instructed, I did as I was told and the car went to fast for me so I slowed down.

"Damn B, good looking out but you ain't have to do this."

"I told you once you get out, I got you. You remember where Tate crib at from here?" He questions me as I pull out the hotel's parking exit.

"Shit, I think so. He still live in same place." I raised my eyebrow.

"You know it." He said as he lit a blunt and passed it to me. I accepted it and placed it between my lips, this was the first blunt I smoked in seven years, so the plan was to enjoy it to myself. After fifteen minutes this catchy song was playing<sup>11</sup>

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🏳️ 🚫 🍀

Don't fuck no bitch that's fucking with your dawg, that's law

If you come up don't forget about your dawgs, that's law

I'm a street nigga so it's fuck the law

If you broke nigga that should be against the law  
Fuck no bitch that's fucking with your dawg, that's law  
If you come up don't forget about your dawgs, that's law  
I'm a street nigga so it's fuck the law  
If you broke nigga that should be against the law<sup>37</sup>

"Who this fam?" I turned to Bishop as inhaled the smoke.

"Gotti." He simply stated.

"Irv Gotti?" My eyes widened.<sup>98</sup>

"Nigga...." He takes a deep breath and shakes his head as if he's annoyed. "It's Yo Gotti and E-40's new hit."<sup>4</sup>

"Damn this shit go hard." I chuckled. "I ain't mean to get on your bad side coz, I ain't know this nigga still be making hits."

"You good." He assures me. "It tickles me any way."<sup>51</sup>

After ten minutes we made it to my boy Tate's house. It looked the same way it did years ago, a white tiny house with a bars blocking the window frames. Bishop led me to the back of the house where pit bulls were barking, nearly ripping their leashes off to get to us. I started to become a little startled.<sup>23</sup>

"It's coo fam, they asses ain't gon do nothin." He then bangs on the back door. "Aye Tate, open up the door nigga!"<sup>4</sup>

"Stop banging on this god damn door witcho bitch as--" A female voice screamed but then she approached the door and her eyes locked on me. She then smiles and slightly opens the door.

"Why y'all ain't tell me Zayn was getting out!" She squealed, and opened the door wider for us to enter. Tyresha was



Tate's little sister, I use to fuck with her before I got locked up but nothing too serious because she was over sensitive back then and I really wasn't ready for a relationship. She was looking fine as hell though,her short figure made her cute, along with her warm sienna skin tone. She had an hourglass frame, thick in all the right places. I was ready to dive in her.24

"That's what I thought." Bishop says, and she faintly pushes him inside. I go in after him and she wraps her arms around me.

"I missed you." She says as she pulls away and caress my cheeks.

"Yeah I missed you too." I lied as I bit my lip, her scent soothed me.16

"Wassup nigga!" I looked up to see Tate with a blunt in his mouth and his arms stretched out wide.

I released myself from Tayresha's grasp then went over to Tate and gave him a brotherly hug.

"Damn G, you finally made it out." He sighed.

"Yeah man...what's been up."

He blew air from his mouth and rubbed his eyes. "Shit, nothing you know me doing the same ole shit, I got some work for you too."

I followed him and Bishop to the basement where weed, coke and guns were laid out on separate tables.

"Damn nigga, the feds ain't kick the doors in yet?" I joked.<sup>7</sup>

He sat in a chair and shook his head. "Nope, when you gon be ready to work? Me and B got the car, we ready for you."

I rubbed my head and shook my head. "Nah, I ain't tryna get myself into no trouble. I just got out."11

"All I need you to do is package them for me, and probably do a little delivering. But that's it."

"I'll think about."

After an hour of chilling with him and Bishop and smoking blunts back to back. I got hungry and thirsty. I looked at the time on my phone and it was already four.

"Aye Tate, i got the munchies, what you got to eat fam?"

He coughs from the smoke and itches his nose. "Tell Resha to fix you something." He tells me,1

I nodded and went upstairs, I remembered which room was

hers, because I've been into so many times. I knocked on the door gently and waited for an answer.<sup>2</sup>

"Who is it?" She ask in a irritated tone.<sup>1</sup>

"Zayn." I stated and her mood changes.

"Oh come in!" She says acceptably. I opened her door and she was laying in the bed watching music videos. Her room still look the same, Pretty Ricky and Bow Wow posters on the walls and kiddish stuff animals.<sup>24</sup>

"Why you ain't move out." I chuckled.

"This is my home, and Tate needs me to take care of him with his immature ass. But what do you need?"

I crack my knuckles and yawn. "I'm hungry, can you fix me something?"

"No, I ain't making you shit." She snaps. I raise my eyebrow and bite on lip.7

"You not?"

She rolls her eyes and turns her television up. I observed as she shakes her leg and her juicy thighs jiggle. She corners her eyes and take a deep breath. "What you still standing there for?"

I close her door and sit beside her and kiss her full lips. I wanted to butter her up so she can give up that cat, because Tayresha got the best pussy. It gets wet and her sex style is nasty and rough just like mine.

"Did you get my letters?" She ask breaking the silence.23

"Yeah I got them, five years ago." I chuckled.

She sits up and wraps her arms around my neck and place her chin in the crook of my neck "Well....you ain't write back so I figured you ain't care."

"Oh." I say to dismiss the conversation.32

"I missed you Zay." She whines as she whispers in my ear softly. I my erect member was nearly poking out of it's place but I stayed calm.

"Mmm Whatever." I shrugged it off. She then hops off the bed and positioned herself in front. I analyze as she pulls her shirt over her head, then slides of her shorts along with her panties. I grab her by both of her cheeks and pull her close to me then begin placing kisses on her flat shaped belly.11

"Can I prove it to you daddy?" She says in a pleading tone.

"Yeah." She then plops down on her knees and pulls my hard member from its secluded place. She then comes down on me with a thrive, I knew one thing was on her mind and it was to make to me cum. She began sucking hard and quick; causing me to let out a long sigh. I watched as her wet soft lips was wrapped around my dick tight, she then begin to sup in her cheeks and make a loud slurping noise, that made me even more hornier. She took me out of her mouth then licked the tip, then put right back in and repeated the same sucking process. She had a nigga in love with the way my dick was going in the back of throat without a fuss.<sup>19</sup>

"Shit girl!" I hissed and sat up a little to give her a stinging slap on her ass. She then moaned from my touch while I was still in her mouth. After ten minutes I felt a nut coming but I wasn't ready, I removed my rod from her opening and rushed to assist her up, then pushed her onto her bed. She got in the position I wanted her in on her own, face down and ass up. I quickly stripped out of my clothes, then clinged my hands onto her tiny waist. I slowly entered my long piece inside her fairly slow causing her gasp.<sup>22</sup>

I wanted to start my pace off steady just hear her pant and beg for me. I stroked into her slowly and she quietly moaned.

"Zay, don't do this you're gonna make me cum fast. Fuck me and stop playing." She looks back at me and grin.

I then fondled into in swift moment, causing her to moan. I watched her ass jiggle all over the place as she threw herself back onto me.

"Ooo Zayn! That feels good!" She screams.<sup>37</sup>

"Throw it back some more for daddy." I instructed and slapped her ass causing her wheeze. She did as she was told and gripped on to the comforter, Her core was now flowing more than a waterfall, I grabbed her waist and pounded her onto my dick.

"Oh shit! Right there! Mmmm God! Ah!" She yells, I the hear



footsteps so I cover her mouth, her moans were now muffled. I go deeper inside of her causing her to whimper even loud. After an hour I finally felt the urge to nut, I pulled myself out of her and released all over her back then slapped her ass once more.<sup>69</sup>

"Ah!" She collapses on the bed and lays on her back, ignoring the fact she has nut on her. She looks at me in a seductive way and bites her lip.<sup>3</sup>

"You missed that shit?" I ask as I begin dressing myself.

"Yes daddy." She nodded.

I chuckled and licked my lips. "I want some chicken and fries baby. Make that for me."<sup>73</sup>

"Okay!" He watches my every move as I walk out her room and close the door. Then I go back down stairs to the basement, Tate and Bishop was staring at me as soon as I

inch toward them.

"Yall heard us?" I smirked.

"You was tearin' that pussy up!" Bishop roars into the laughter and I did to.42

"We heard the bed rocking, you better leave her alone man. She gon' think ya'll together." Tate adds.67

I sit down and the chair then yawn. "She'll be a'ight."

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 4- Pusherman

"Turn left." Bishop gestures as were on the road driving. We then drove down an isolated road, we were passing huge condos that had their own land. I was amazed at how

serene the neighborhood, being from South Central the streets never slept.

"Pull up in this drive way." He tells me, and I do as I'm told with my eyes widened, the house was Iron Mountain grey color, the windows were perfectly glossed and comely arched.<sup>1</sup>

I shut the engine off and we both climb out of the car at the same time. I followed him and I was amazed by the house that had much of my eye appeal. I trailed behind him as he walked up to the door, then he pulled out the key and unlocked the door, we both went inside and flicked all the switches on the side of the wall

"How you be affording this shit?" I asked in curious tone as I looked around the lavish house.

"A five star man baby." He chuckled. "Follow me up here." He indicated with his hands, I then trailed behind him. Within seconds we made it upstairs, and he led me to this bedroom

that seem to be the master bedroom. The walls were painted a charcoal gray and it had five mirrors on the right side of the wall.

"Four bedroom, three bathroom, living room, family room and a big ass kitchen. Take care of it, once you get on your feet you paying 8,000 a month, the car is on me." He then tosses the house key my way.<sup>75</sup>

"Come on B, I know we family but you ain't gotta look out for me like this."<sup>9</sup>

He comes close to me and shake my hand, as he give me a stern look. "I always told you when I get my cake you always gon' get a piece of it. You my fam to life, I don't care what everybody else in the family talking like. You my nigga, my cousin, I got you."<sup>42</sup>

Those words touched a nigga hurt, I gave him a brotherly hug and folded my lips. "I appreciate it, cause I really did think everybody was mad at me after what went down--"

"I know your heart man, you ain't gotta explain yourself." He cuts me off and I nod my head.

"Thanks B."

"I know you ain't tryna be affiliated with the street shit, all I need you to do is stand on the corners and make deliveries, you know lure in customers. You gon' make a few thousands every month cause ima throw in something a little extra." He interprets.<sup>27</sup>

"Ima do what I gotta do." I take a deep breath as I rub the back of my head.

"Coo. Be up by 8:30, ima bring some of the supply by so you can get started."

"Alright I got'chu."

"Alright, Ima go wait outside I got somebody who about to pick me up." He give me another brotherly hug and we say

our farewell, he then exits my new bed room. I take a good look around the room that is now mine and flop on the bed,

"Alright then." I say out loud as I rub the back of my head and lay back.

"Girl stop!" I laugh as my eight year old sister speed away from me as we were walking to the store.

"Fine!" She giggles and hold my hand as she walks beside me.

I looked down at her, and her the sun beamed down her head, enhancing the dark brown color of her hair. Her warm latte complexion was letting off a bronze look as the sun light shadowed it.

"You love me or somethin?" She raises her eyebrow as she look up at me.

"Of course." I tell her. "Why do you ask?"

"Because you keep staring at me like you crazy or somethin'" She rolls her neck,

I jerk my head back and playfully frown. Then pick her up and put her over my shoulder causing her to giggle.

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K



23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🏳️ 🚫 🍀

"Put me down."

"Nah, cause i'm crazy." I joked. She scoots her way down then wrap her arms around my neck.

"I'm sorry!" She laughs.

"Mmm okay." I let her down and we finally approached the corner store. She walked through the open door way and started looking at the candy, the first shelf right when you

enter.

"Get what you want Lee, so we can go." I instruct.<sup>12</sup>

"Okay Zayn." She said annoyed, she grabs a bag of skittles, a twix bar then she goes down the aisle to the chips and I observe as she grab a large size of hot fries. She holds her items up and look at me.<sup>1</sup>

"Can I get a drink too?" She wiggles her eyebrows.

"Come on little girl" I gestured as I went over to where the soft drinks and alcoholic drinks were stationed, I opened up the freezer door and she picked out a minute maid pink lemonade, I grabbed a Bud Light from the freezer next to it.<sup>18</sup>

"Alright come on." We went to the register and I sat all her items on the surface of the counter and pulled out a wad of cash.

"What's going on today?" Sam the cashier asked.

"Nothin, just chilling with lil sis." I shrugged.

"7.19" He told me the price as he finished bagging up all of our things.

I gave him a ten dollar bill, stuffed my money back into my and grabbed our items. "Keep the change man."4

Leyana followed me out of store and we begin to make our journey back home. She went into the bag as it was in my wrist. "You want some of my chips big head?" She offered.

"Nah I'm good Lee." I tell her.

"Zayn can I ask you question?"

"You just did."

She huffs while rolling her eyes, the crunch on her chips.

"Well can I ask you another one?"

"You just asked me another one." I tested, and tried to hold onto my laugh but I failed.

"Zayn!" She whines.

"Ask me." I shrugged as I laid her head on my side and rubbed her head.

"Why do you sell drugs?" She ask me with curiosity glowing into her eyes. This caught me off guard because I never had a child ask me this. How do I even start with this response.<sup>7</sup>

"I do it to take care of you and mom Lee." I say truthfully.

"Well you don't have to do it do you?" She looks up.

"I guess not." I shrugged.

We begin to get close to our house, so she took off running. I started to open my beer bottle and think about whether or not I wanted to fuck with Tayresha today.

"No!" I heard my sister scream.

**BAM!**

My head shot up and I saw her tiny figure falling down to the ground. I dropped my beer bottle and ran to her. I heard tires screeching down the road, as I finally made it the scene, I quickly turned her over to see blood spilling from her mouth, and the blood from the fresh bullet wounds stained her shirt.<sup>38</sup>

"Lee!" I shouted.

"I told you to stop." She simply states as her eye roll in the back of her head.105

"AH!" I woke up in a cold sweat, the dream I just awoken from was nothing more than petrifying. After coming to the realization that it was just a dream, I pull the covers off me and turn on the lamp on the night stand. Then I make my way into the bathroom, I turned the knobs for the water and splashed the cool feeling on my face, then grabbed the towel that was hanged up on ring nearby and dried my face off.9

I stared at my reflection and the mirror, then took a few deep breaths before shedding a few tears.7

Makeila7

"Happy birthday Bri!" I shouted as I tickled my daughter, she was bundled up under covers but begin to squirm as and laugh as I used my finger tips to attack her. I snatched the covers over her head and she looked up at me with a smile.

"Hello Princess, are you ready for the day." I asked with a wide smile spreading across my face, I think I was more excited than she was. She nods her head and give me a wide grin.

"I'm ready."

"Well get up and come eat this food I made you." I instructed, she hops out from the comfort of her bed then speed pass me and go out the door. I chuckled as I went into her closet and grabbed the brand new outfit I bought her a week ago, I laid the outfit on her dresser then exited the room and went into the kitchen, wheres she was at the table chowing down on the big brunch I made her, which was a mini heart shaped pancakes, eggs, turkey sausage and a large portion of fruit salad. It's really nothing new, because I feed her like this on a regular.'2

"You like your breakfast baby?" I asked as I begin to clean the mess that I made in the kitchen.

"Yes." She said gladly as she popped a grape into her mouth.  
"Can I play with your phone." She points to my Galaxy that was near her at the table.<sup>70</sup>

"Go ahead, I'm about to take a shower and then it will be your turn."

After thirty minutes, I was finishing bathing myself, I turned off the water and exit the steam storm then wrapped my towel around my body.

"Daddy do you love me?" I heard Aabria's tiny first as I exited the bathroom.<sup>1</sup>

"Well if you do, why don't you never come see me."<sup>30</sup>

I enter the kitchen and frown at her, the phone was hugged onto her ear, And she had a happy grin on her face.



"Aabria, who are you talking to?" I questioned.

"Daddy." Her tone softens. "Do you want to talk to mommy? Ok."

She then hands the phone and to me, and I slowly take it then put it against my ear. "Hey Jason."

"Why would you have her call me asking all of those questions?"

I lean against the wall and roll my eyes. "First of all she called you on her own, I told you she misses you."

A long interlude came over this phone conversation, and he then responded. "How about this, I meet yall at the Trillium theater and I'll sit with her and watch a movie?"<sup>11</sup>

I place my hand on hip and nod. A movie doesn't sound too bad and it's a good way for them to bond. "What time?"

"I know this one movie starts at 8:30, Finding Dory or some shit, I'll meet y'all up there at eight." He tells me.<sup>35</sup>

"Alright, that sounds good Jay. She'll like that." I say pleased.

Aabria stretches out her arm and reaches for me. "Can I finish talking to him."

"She wants to talk to." I give her back the phone and she smiles. Seeing her love this dead beat and overlooking his flaws melted my heart.

"You promise daddy? You gon' bring me a gift? Okay, I love you." She says and within seconds she turns around and smiles at me.<sup>22</sup>

"My daddy is so nice mom, he said he's gonna buy me a whole bunch of gifts." The smile on her face assured to me

that she was happy and couldn't wait to see her father.73

\*\*\*\*

"I would leave that no good bastard alone and take care of my daughter by my self." My mother says as she set plates on the table, we were celebrating Aabria's party inside of an indoor playground, my mom and my father ordered two bounce houses, one was the theme frozen and the other was hello kitty. And it was another play tools.25

I rest my head in the palm of my hands and watch her every move "He wants to see her this time mom. He's getting his mind right."47

"Yeah whatever.... He should've got his mind right five years ago." She sighs.18

My father then approached the table with Princess Aabria riding his back, some of her cousins followed. I smiled at her glamour, today I pulled her thick wavy hair into a high

curly ponytail, with her baby hairs slaying! I dressed her into an outfit I put together myself, she was sporting legging that was colored beige. A british plaid skirt, sided with a clean black t-shirt, I bought her some simple black Uggs that hold golden belts. And to top it all of I put a bow in her hair that had the same tartan fabric as the skirt. I love using my styling skills on her, it's so fun.<sup>3</sup>

He let her off her his back and sat across from me and she plopped in his lap.

"Are you having fun guys?" I asked the kids.

"Yeah!" They all cheered.

"Can we sing happy birthday already, I have to see my daddy!" Aabria pouted. I giggled at her humor and sat back.

\*\*\*\*

"Have fun girls." Tysis said in a childish tone as she made a

complete stop in front of the movie theater. I got a text from Jay an hour ago and he said he'll be here, Aabria was ecstatic and I can admit that I was too.19

"I'm about to see my daddy!" Aabria clapped.27

"Thanks for the ride, he said he'll take us home." I informed Tysis.16

"Cool." She nods. I exit the vehicle, then open the door to the back seat to allow Aabria to come out as well. She jumps out with excitement and intertwines her hands with mine. We then enter the movie theater.

After seven minutes were sitting in the bench inside of it and she was anxious.

"Can we get some popcorn?" She tilts her head to the side.

"We gotta wait for him to come."23

"Okay!" She smiles.

Seven minutes then turned into ten. I pulled out my phone and texted him for the fifth time.

Me: Where here, where are you?

We stayed in the foyer waiting. We had to miss about fifteen minutes of the movie. Aabria then fell asleep on my shoulder. Did I come to the wrong theater? Is this not his number? My mind started to flood with questions. Fifteen minutes, turned to thirty, thirty turned to fifty, and fifty turned to an hour and a half, almost two hours.<sup>53</sup>

Rage filled my soul, as people begin to come out of the theaters and exit the building all together. Aabria stirred out of her slumber and looked up at me.

"Is he here?" Her soft one flows.

"No. The movie is over and it's closing time."

She then burst out in tears and stare at the ground. "But he promised." her eyes wrinkle. I stood up and grabbed her hand, then hugged her close beside, we both exited out the theater. And her silent weeps and sniffles put a pain in my heart. How could he just make a promise, and stand her up like that? I was beyond pist off, because my daughter doesn't deserve this. Was it too hard, to say "I can't come?"<sup>51</sup>

We made it to the bus stop, and precipitation then begin to fall lightly on us. I looked up at the sky and charcoal colored clouds starting to form as family, telling me that a storm was coming. I looked at my phone and it was nearly dying, only on 2%. I couldn't even make a call.<sup>6</sup>

"I want my daddy." She cries beside me. I take off my jacket and put it overhead since the rain was starting to come down hard, then stroked the side of his face.<sup>21</sup>

Zayn

I sat in the car and counted all of the cash that I made today, which was 400 dollars; quick money. My car was parked in the structure of an abandoned gas station. I was waiting for my last sell to come through. I finally spotted him coming from across the street, within in moments he approached my car and I rolled down my window.

"Waddup Pusher Man." he chuckles and quietly then gives me an brotherly handshake.

"Waddup." I shrugged.

"You made it out, B got yo" ass flashin and shit, But lemme just get a dime." I reach into my pocket and retrieve a quarter ounce of weed that was secured in a thin sandwich bag, that was tied up.<sup>2</sup>



"Money first, then serve." I stated. He then goes into his pocket and grab the money. Then slap it into my hands. Before giving him the supply, I counted the money which equalled up to a \$140 dollars.<sup>25</sup>

"Aight fam." I start my car, and he nods at me before walking off.

I smoked a blunt while cruising the streets of LA, a rain shower poured down from the sky. I should be at home because I love when it storms, getting high when it's raining is the best thing ever. I stopped at a red light, and a young dark skinned woman then crossed the street carrying a child.

"Why she ain't got no car, I know she can't see with all this rain." I skipped the red light and made a right turn and begin following her. I guess she got tired because she stopped running and just begin to speed walk. I slowly glided my car beside her.<sup>11</sup>

I rolled down my window and attempted to grasp his attention, "Aye miss!"

She glances over the car, then begin to speed walk. "Aye! You need a ride, you don't need to be out in the rain with that baby."

"I'm fine!" She screams.<sup>1</sup>

"It's storming outside ma, I'm not trying to holler at you. I just want to give you and your child a ride home. It's too cold outside for yall to be walking."

"We're fine." She snaps.

I pull over and shut off the engine. I exited out of the car then run to her.<sup>10</sup>

"Get away from me!" She shouts, I looked at her, and tears fell from her eyes<sup>2</sup>

"I ain't a crazy man, I just want to get you and your child home. It's too cold, yall can sick and it's dark. I'll take you straight home."

"I don't have any gas money for you." She paces to say.

"And I don't want any, I just want to drive you home." I say sincerely. She rubs the child's back and I grab her hand but she snatches it away and then begins to walk to my car. I open the door to the back seat and she sat her kid down, then take the jacket off that was on her head, revealing that it was a young baby girl.

"Mommy my head hurts." She tells her as she put on her seat belt.

"Okay we're going home."

I get into the driver's seat then watch her every move as

she gets in. I must say she was fine, even with all the clothes she had on/ She wore grey leggings that enhanced the size of her thick thighs, she wore a purple long sleeved shirt with simple grey boots. Her hair was wet and curly. I started the car and turned to her.<sup>3</sup>

"What's your address?"

She scolds me with her eyes, I can tell she had a major attitude problem. "You tryna harm me." Her voice shakes.<sup>43</sup>

"Nah ma, I was gonna put in the GPS." I turn on the gps to my car then looked at her. She twist her lips and squirms in her seat.

"Oh, 3448 Gwendolyn."<sup>10</sup>

I put it in and surprisingly it was thirty minutes away. I didn't mind, but I was concerned that she was trying to walk there in the rain.

"Wow....you were gonna walk home?"

"The bus was taking forever to come, I stood their for an hour. I had to get her home."

I nodded and looked in the rearview mirror, and saw her daughter shedding tears. Something heavy must've been on her mind.<sup>19</sup>

Throughout the whole ride, it was silent, I can tell baby girl was shy and kept to herself. I finally approached her apartment complex.

"Thanks....." She takes off his seatbelt and hurry out my vehicle. She got her daughter and I watched them walk inside making sure they made it in safely. I can tell they had a hard night.

Chapter 5- Keep Ya Head+

"Damn, this what I'm talkin' 'bout fam." Bishop says at he

sits at his desk counting the money I made within four days, It was almost 3,000 dollars. He nodded and smirked. Then went into his drawer and pulled out a wad of cash then tossed it to me.<sup>9</sup>

"Keep doing what you doing. But word of advice, don't sell and ride around in the beamer. Niggas on the block we'll see you livin lavish and try to rob your ass. Then the police gon' get suspicious, I got a hummer I don't put to use, you can use to make your deliveries if you want." He suggests.<sup>20</sup>

"I'll take it." I nod.

"You think you need some heat?" He questions referring to a gun.

"Yeah." I shrug.

He rises from his seat and shove his hands into his pocket,

then goes across the hall and open a door to the closet, he shuffles everything then brings his attention towards me with a glock in his hands, he gives it to me and I place it on my waist line.

"Good lookin'" I nod.

"Can't have my boy unarmed when the block is hot."14

"Well let me get out of here." I stretch my hand out and we give each other a brotherly hug.

"Aight,call me if you need me."

"I got you fam"

\*\*\*\*

I entered Keiro Nursing Home, fearful and high strung. The

grip I had on the flowers I were holding was so tight that the end started to bent, I took a deep breath and approached the front desk, where a young white female receptionist was staring at me while twirling a black ink pen between her fingertips.

"Hello are you here to see some one day."

"Y-y-yea An--" I took a deep breath and cleared my throat.  
"Yes, I am here to Angelique Warrior."

"And who are you to her?" She questions.

"Her son." I stated

She stands up and straightens out her brown blouse. "I'll take you to her room, follow me." She says as she gestures for me to trail behind. We finally make it to her room, I stared at the name tag on her door and begin to get nervous.



The receptionist knocks on the door softly. "Angel, your son is here for you."

After a few moments we got no response so she opened the door and there was my mother sitting in the chair with her back facing us, smoke flowed above her head as she smoked on her cigarette. I found the strength to walk in, the receptionist gave us some privacy so I closed the door. I hovered over my mother with a wide smile, she still looked the same, warm mocha skin with thick long hair that stopped in the middle of her hair.

"Wassup ma?" I said joyfully as set flowers down on her small and bent down to give her hug. I then let her go and sat on her bed.

"How you been mama, you look good."

She stared me down with one of her eyebrows raised then

looked out the window and continued to ignore presence.

"You know I just got out last weekend, and um I've been working with Bishop. He's like the only one who doesn't hate my ass. I got you these flowers, cause I know back at home you use to put them gardening tools to work, oh l-look at this rose."

I pulled out a pink rose, from the flower bouquet. "You remember this, those roses you planted in '03 and they bloom every where. I was riding pass the house and I saw them in back yard and I was like yo....this mama favorite." I chuckled but she folded her lips and stared out the window her ignoring broke my heart into pieces.

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets

of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business

school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🏳️‍🌈 🏳️‍🌈 🏳️‍🌈

"Mama, I missed you and I wanna let you know that i'm sorr--"

"Shut the hell up with that sorry shit Zayn." She says bluntly as she roll her eyes, then huff. She puts her cigarette out; only to light another one.<sup>36</sup>

"You're the reason why in here." She says as she places her lighter on the table. "Yo' bitch ass just like your daddy, always fucking some shit up! Don't come to me with that, mama i'm sorry shit. I knew I should've gave yo ass up. I knew-" she pats her chest in rapid movement as tears fell from her eyes. "I knew I should've never hand you. Cause you was gon' end up just like him.....you to--you just sorry motherfucker Zayn."38

Those words made a me shed the realest tears out of the seven years I was locked up. I attempted to hold both of her hands but she shooed me away.

"Mama, I didn't mean it; you know I didn't mean it ma! If I could take it all back I would and you know it. Mom I don't want you to hate me anymore. While I was locked up, I thought about you every single day! That shit hurt me more than it hurt you." I break down and tears and get on my knees then lay my head on her lap.6

"Ma I need you to forgive me! I need you too!"<sup>13</sup>

"Get the fuck out Zayn. Get the fuck out!" She screams then pushes me off of her. I stand up and my heart is completely broken. I looked her in her face as anger formed her expression. I nod my head in what seemed to be understanding; then I walked over to the door.

"Hey ma?" I called out, and she turned to me as she wiped tears from her eyes,

"You can disown me all you want, but I will never shut you out. You my mama and my Queen; I will always love you." With that being said I exited the her room and left.<sup>79</sup>

\*\*\*\*

Makeila<sup>1</sup>

"I am so fucking pist." I grunt as I sit in the break room and tears fall from my eyes, after last night I was completely

irritated by everything. I was mad that Jason stood us up like that, it broke my heart even more seeing my daughter cry all night. And on top of that, I lost my damn phone.<sup>29</sup>

"Do you need a blunt?" Tysis questions me with a concerned look on her face.

I grabbed hold of my hair and nodded. I haven't smoked in two years, I'm suppose to be sober but as of now I can not even do it.

"Come on let's go." I tell her.

\*\*\*

Tysis and I sat in her car, and shared the best blunt I had in awhile. All of my worries, was slowly being forgotten as I inhaled the soothing substance.

"You know you really need to just leave Jay alone, you can't force him to be in Aabria's life."5

I turned to her then passed her the blunt. " I shouldn't be feeling this way, he told me he loved me an--he said he wanted to be with me. It;s like for the last five years i've been strung out over him, just analysing over why he doesn't want me or Bri. I hate love man."72

"You need to calm down and breathe. Stop worrying about because he doesn't deserve hard working woman he doesn't even deserve his daughter. You need to get over him Mikie."

"I can't!" I bust out in tears. "All I do is think about him and I can't stop."11

"We--" Before she could respond, I heard a tap on window, I turned and to my surprise it was the guy who gave me a ride last night.



"How the hell did you find me?! Are you stalking me?!" I yelled at him.<sup>25</sup>

"Who is he?" ask Tysis.

I ignored her and got of the car with my arms crossed.

"Nah, nah ma." He pulls my phone out of his pocket and continues to speak. "I found your phone an--"

I snatched it from him and frowned. "I've been looking for this! But how did you find me?!"<sup>59</sup>

"Well I found your phone in my car, so I charged it and started going through it, just so I can find away to give it back to you. I found your mother's number and I called her to tell I had the phone and she told me that you worked here."

"Just give a stranger my info." I huff. I press the power button and go straight to my messages hoping to see

something from Jay but there was nothing.13

"Fucking ass hole." I mumbled to myself, then I looked up at the guy to see him gazing at my attire.

"Okay, thank you for the phone. You can go now." I use my hand to shoo him away and grins, and continue to stare.

"Bye!" I frowned.51

"Damn Miki, why you being so mean, he just want a nice thank you." Tysis says as she exits the car with a her eyebrows knitted together.

"Miki, that's a dope name." He says with bass in his voice and licks his full lips, that were rather juicy. I took a moment to check him out. He stood over 6'0, his skin was a rich dark native complexion and he had a hair full of curly hair that was wild and formed into an small fro. His muscle bound body was damn near ready to bust out of his clothes,

he sported a scarlet red Nike jogging suit along with matching KD's on his feet. I then snapped out of my gaze when I notice he was still in his,

"Why are you still here?" I say abruptly.<sup>31</sup>

"I'm sorry for her nasty ass attitude." Tysis steps in to say.  
"But what's your name?"<sup>2</sup>

"Zayn." He simply states and continue to stare making me feel disgusted. I then walk off and start goin towards my work place.

"Miki, where are you going?" I hear Tysis call after me.

"I have work to do." I tell her

\*\*\*\*

"Have a nice day." I tell a customer as I give her items that was being kept inside a plastic work bag. Tysis then approach me with a wide smile spreading across her face. I poked out my lips and scrunched up my eyebrows.

"What's your problem?" I ask her as I sit in my seat.

She then gives a small piece of paper. "Zayn said call him sometimes."

"Eww." I frowned.

"Don't even front, you know that nigga was fine." She stares me down and try hard not smile; at the fact that she looked so dumb.

"He was cute right?" She lifts her eyebrow. "You need a man with your lonely ass." She jokes.<sup>13</sup>

I then look down at the desk and begin straightening up. Tysis then interrupts the process by grabbing my hand, forcing me to face her.

"Girl i'm your friend, so I'm going to always be real with you. It's been five years since you've been depressed over Jason, you need to move on because he's not the one for you or Aabria. You are the most hardworking and beautiful woman I know and you have such a great spirit but your heart broken and you don't deserve to feel this way. I know it's hard because he took your virginity and all; but you need to understand that you don't deserve a man that'll walk over you like he did. You and your daughter is special. One day the right man will come, but focus on your baby and how to make her happy. God is gonna give you something better, let go girl."40

I start to shed tears and she hugs me tight and rubs my head softly. "You'll find something better Keila. I promise you.18

\*\*\*\*

"Bri, do you want me to make Spaghetti today? I was going

to make chili cheese fries and hot dog, but we ain't go no cheese." I tell her while looking through our refrigerator.

"It doesn't matter." She says in a low tone, that sounded a bit sad to me. I close the fridge then glance over at her as she sits at the kitchen table doing her homework. I take my time walking over to her, then I place my hand on her shoulder.<sup>4</sup>

"You need some help baby?"

"I'm fine." He tone remains weak.

I lean in and take a quick look at her notebook that says Dear Diary, I hate my daddy. He is stinky trash. She slams the book close and I look at her as she gives me a startled look.<sup>105</sup>

"You're not in trouble Bri." I take a seat in the empty chair next to her and scoot closer to her and hold her soft little

hands.

"He hates me and he thinks I'm ugly, that's why he doesn't want me." She says as her facial mien lowers. I hated that those words came out her mouth, and it breaks my heart to know that she feels this way.<sup>1</sup>

"Look at me Aabria." I instruct, but she refuse to listen.

"Look at me Aabria." I repeat myself, but this time I say it more sternly. Her eyes then rises as she stares into mine.

"Your not ugly and no one has any reason to hate you. Your daddy is stinky trash, because he can't see that you are his blessing and one of his most precious gifts."

Her hands slips out of mine and she wipes her eyes. "What's a blessing?" She questions out of curiosity.

"God's favor. A blessing a gift, something that is special, something that is granted to us. Our house is a blessing."

"Are you a blessing mommy?"

"Yeah, it's a blessing for you to have me; because I gave you life, I feed you good food everyday, I teach and take care of you. It's a blessing to have a mother and it's a blessing to have you. Every time I'm sad I can look at your face and your beauty makes everything better." I tap her nose and she giggles.<sup>23</sup>

"You and I, are going to make it without your father. And know that you always have me....I'll give you all that love and life can give, because you're my baby and I want to see happy. Don't hate your dad but remember he is stinky trash because he doesn't know he has an angel like you."<sup>22</sup>

She then cheeses and jumps into my arms wrapping her short arms around my neck. "I love you mommy." She tells me.



"I love you more."

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 6- Christmas Time

Zayn

(2001, Christmas Eve Age 10)8

"Leave me alone man, I ain't doing this with you!" I screamed as I attempted to flea down the stairs but he pulled me by the back neck bag and dragged me back to him.1

"You gon do what I want you to boy!" He shouted and shoved me into the wall, I looked into his cold eyes and begin to

shiver from the fear I was enduring.

"No! It's not right, God wouldn't want this." I said with tears racing down my cheeks. I breathed hard and prayed in my head, that he would just let me be. I didn't like the things he did to me every night.<sup>47</sup>

He yanked me by my collar and threw me around the small hall way. "Stop being a little bitch boy and get yo' ass in that room."

"Nah!" I strived to run away but I failed, he pushed me inside my room and closed the door. I stood up and grabbed my silver steel baseball bat, I aimed to hit him in head but missed hitting his shoulder.<sup>3</sup>

He groaned in pain. "Boy!" The bat was snatched out of my hand and tossed across the room. He grabbed me and forced me onto the bed, pinning me on my stomach. He pressed my head against the comforters, I could barely breathe.

He began his process by pulling down my black basketball shorts. "Stop! Stop! Mama!" I tried to yell but my words were being muffled. He stripped me out of my undergarments and I felt him go inside of me anally, I yelled in pain and continued to scream from my mother; but she never came to my rescue.<sup>167</sup>

\*\*\*

Next Morning

"It's Christmas boy, wake up." He hovered over me, I fully awoke from slumber and dragged my feet into the living, where my mother was holding my baby sister in her lap helping her open a present.

"Good morning little boy." She grinned at me and pat the empty seat next her, I took the seat and laid my head on her shoulder, looking for comfort.

"Stop it Zay." She squirmed getting my head off of her.  
"Open that big present up.....over there on the right."21

\*\*\*\*

"Mama where Shane go?" I ask referring to her husband.  
She was at the kitchen stripping the fat off of a whole  
chicken. She looked over her shoulder.

"He went to go get some yams, why?"

"Mama....he keep on touching me."2

She froze in place and turned to look at me. "Touching you  
how?"

I stayed silent, because I did not know how to tell her that I  
was hurting, I sat down at the kitchen table and ran my

fingers through my wooly hair, she kept her attention on me waiting for an answer. "He just keeps putting his hands on me and stuff."<sup>1</sup>

"Well if he beating your ass you probably deserve it, all you gotta do is be respectful." She tells me, then turn off the water and dry her hands off with a cloth and quick vanishes out of the kitchen.<sup>77</sup>

## Present Day

I drove down the highway with some old school gangsta shit bumping through my stereos, Today was Christmas, so I had people hitting my line ready for their daily dos. Tate was one of them who wanted some of the good stuff that Bishop just had ship in, I pulled into his drive way, and shut my engine off then climbed out of the car.<sup>1</sup>

As I was walking to his door step a elderly black woman mugged me as she watered her grass, as if my presence upset, I shrugged it off and knocked on the door waiting for

an answer. After a few moments he finally opened the door, with a worn out look on his face. "What's up fam." His hand rised asking for a brotherly hug.

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔫 🧱 ♂

I gave him one and followed him into his home, that seemed unsanitary; dirty clothes a long with broken dishes was every where as I followed him down stairs, the strong scent of majarauna reached my nose as I strolled down.

"Damn nigga, you need to hire a nanny?" I question in a jokeful, but was more than serious.

"Nah man." He stood in front of his table of guns and yawned. "This is officialy the trap." He says with his arms spreaded out wide. "Me and Resha got a new place down town man, it's bigger than this piece of shit that mama left us,"

"Y'all got a new place or she does?" I raised my eyebrow, as I walked over to him and pulled out the ounces of weed.



"We got a new place nigga, damn," He snaps not even really paying attention to what I just, he takes one of the ounces and smell it. "This smell good, it smell good." He chuckles.<sup>3</sup>

"Yeah, this the shit he wanted you to have. He been grabbing from this one dude he said."

"Alright. You know me and Resha having a lil Christmas party tonight, you should come through."

I nod my head and sniff "It's is gon' be formal?"

"Nah nigga, I'm inviting some hoes, they gon' be in costumes and shit bruh, niggas gon be there with hella bud and drinks...we gon' get it poppin. Tayresha having a lil costume party all the hoes gon wear a sexy red suit, while the niggas where silk pajamas...I ain't participating in the shit but you can probably get you a lil freak for the night if you be down."<sup>6</sup>

I chortle a bit and nod my head. "Well see, give the address and I may come through, You trynna light a blunt though?" I asked.

"Yeah."

\*\*\*\*5

I decided to take Tate's offer to go to the party since I had nothing better to do. After taking a nice steamy shower, I put on a pair of white trues and a simple bright red polo shirt along with three of my gold chains, and my rolex. I put on my coat and was ready to go.

After twenty minutes the gps guided me to a nice sized house, that had cars parked down the crub, a group of people were scatted across the lawn just chilling, I can hear the latest rap hits playing from outside, I parked my vehicle with every one elses, then grabbed my weed from out of the

glove department;tucking it deep down in my pockets. I put a cigarette behind my ear and climbed out.37

"Hey." A white chick said as I was walking inside, the way she was smiling at me told me she wanted some attention but I wasn't for it, I ignored her and entered the house; seeing unfamiliar faces left to right.1

I leaned back against the wall and pulled my phone out of my pocket so I can take before I could a pair of light brown arms wraps around my neck from behind, I then turn around to see Tayresha, I checked out her attire; she was rocking a short red santa dress with white fur and a black belt, she wore long black stockings with angel white Gucci boots, that rised up to her knee and her hair was braided back in Goddess braids.5

"I see we're matching," She smirks. "Why you ain't been calling me?"

I rub my hands together and lick my lips, "I've been busy

girl."

"So you've been too busy for your girl friend, really?"<sup>49</sup>

I corner my eyes side to side in confusion, because I did not recall her and I having a relationship, I twist my lips and shake my head. "You ain't my girl baby."

"You need to stop playing."

"Trust me, I ain't playing." I say truthfully and she smiles as if she still did not get it.

"Resha!" A voice screamed over the music, I seen a familiar face sauntering her way over to us, I then realized she was ol' girl's friend from the other day that asked me for my number so she can give it to her,

"Hey Ty!:" Resha says with a bubbly smile and hugs her, Ty then looks behind her and frowns. "Girl would you hurry your ass up!"

She rolls her eyes and smirks "I bought my home girl and she kinda shy."

The fine girl I once saw a one or two times popped up behind her with her arm folded, Tysis and Resha said a few words to each other while me and ol girl locked eyes. She was beautiful as hell, she wasn't like the rest of these hoes at this party she wore a simple caramel brown Ralph Lauren sweater with a pair of white jeans that brought out the best of her round behind, her curly hair was pinned up in a bun with two braids in the front. Her make up looked professionally done.<sup>12</sup>

"This is my best friend Makiela." She introduces her to Tayresha, I don't think she even notice I was there.

"Hey Makiela. " Tayresha smiles the cuddled next to me with

her head on my chest "Um Ty. This is my man Zayn"

"Oh we know each other, remember him Makiela?" She turns to her friend.

"Yeah I do.:

I frown and slightly push her head off of my chest. "Why you lying to people man, you know damn well I'm not your man."78

She jerks her head back and frowns "Don't act brand new nigga, you know damn well I don't play that shit."

I switch my mouth to the side and rolled my eyes. "Yeah okay man, where your brother at?" I questioned.

"In the basement." She tells me as she points to a specific direction. "Its right down the hall."

I take that guidance and walk away, I then make it down to the basement where music was blasting and loud weed can be smell.

"What's up fam." a nigga greeted me a head nod and I did the same, I made to a table where I saw Tate and Bishop playing poker with a few other guys, they both had females in they lap while doing so.

"What's yall niggas up to?" I say while standing behind Bishop, I took the blunt that his hoe had and put it in my mouth.<sup>4</sup>

"Shit nothin, I see you made it out."

"It ain't not I could really do at the crib, so I decided to turn up I guess." I take a seat and look at Tate as he concenterate on the poker chips.

"Wassup Zaa--- nigga don't be tryna cheat me!" He say to one of his oppenents with out even finishing his greeting.

Bishop inhales the smoke from his blunt and gesture for the girl on his lap to get up. Once she does so he looks at me and nods his head to the corner of the room, I guess he wanred to talk alone as we make it to the corner he begins to speak. "Did I tell you that I got a kid on a way."

"Word? By who nigga?"

His voice gets weary from the smoke, as he inhale the smoke. "You know its with Jaymee, we got back together a couple weeks ago and she just told me this morning that ima be a pops."<sup>12</sup>

"Damn congratulations man." I say as we both participate in a brotherly hug.

"You need to be trying to get you a kid, get you a good girl."



"Yeea...I don't know how that's gonna work out, things changed since I've been locked hoes got they head too far up they ass and I ain't got time for that shit." I shake my head from side to side while rubbing my hair.

"True dat, true dat...I see you cut all of your hair off." He say referring to my fresh new cut.

"Couldn't find nobody to braid it man." I chuckle.8

Bam! A gun shot then make everyone in the room freeze in place, as Tate stands over a niggas body with his heat aimed at him, he breathed hard and frowned. "You gon' cheat me out of my money, nigga you can die!" He shouts.30

"Yo Tate? Wassup man?" Bishiop ask with open arms, he walks over to Tate and tries to calm him down.

"Nah fuck that B! This nigga tryna steal from me."

I ditch the chaotic scene and guide myself back upstairs. I go into the kitchen and see Makilea about to get a cup of juice "No no, don't drink that." I rush up to her and grab the jug.<sup>3</sup>

She knits her eyebrows together in confusion. "Why not?"

"You don't know what this shit lace with lil mama." I chuckle and set it down. And she nods her head in agreement.

"Why you don't have on the lil red costume like everyone else?" I ask.

"Oh I'm a Shedeer!" She says excited while tugging at the waist band of her sweater.<sup>41</sup>

"A who deer?" I laugh.

"A shedeer...I was going for reigndeer colors." She sums it up and shake my head a widen my eyes.

"You should've just said that the first time. I like your style...I see you equipped with game when it comes to dressing."

"Yeah...I want to be a designer and stylist one." She inclines.

"Shit for real, you should help me shop sometimes you know, help me fit in with today trends. I'm tryna be on fleek too!" I lighten my voice like a females, causing her to giggle.<sup>29</sup>

"Sure, um...I want to appologize for a couple of weeks ago.,you deserve a better thank you."<sup>9</sup>

I scrunched up my face and shrugged it off. "Nah you good, don't worry about it. Where's ya girl at?"

"Tysis..is in the living room watching some guys strip out of thier silk." She shakes her head and grins. "I couldn't watch."

"Your a good girl huh?" I question her.

"I guess...man I'm thristy all they got is liquor on top of liquor."

I rub my head and stare down at her short figure. "You wanna run up to the corner store real quick and grab you something, I;m in need of some rellos anyway."

"I don't know...I gotta stick with the buddy system. I can't leave my girl alone."

"She can go too if she want, I ain't one of them niggas who's gon lace your shit or try do something off of the wall...Ima take you the store and bring you right back." I say truthfully.

She pokes out her lip and lightly shrugs. "I guess we can go."

"Alright." I grin.

We both make our way out of the crowded house, and she follows me to my car, I use the automatic remote to unlock the door and she opens it in climbs in. I do the same then close my door and put the key in the ignition starting the car up.<sup>1</sup>

"So how have you been?"

She raises her eyebrow and look over at me with a weird expression. "I've been cool." She simply states.

"You can turn the radio on your favorite station if you like." I offer as I pull off, she lowly giggles and lean over then begin tuning through the stations. She turns on 105.9 and Sweet Lady by Tyrese comes on.<sup>21</sup>

"I caught it as soon as it started." She chitters and turns the volume up a notch.

I gaze at her from the corner of my eye, watching as she rocks in her seat and snap her fingers to the beat, I must say that her beauty caught me in a daze.

"So you a old head huh?" I ask.

"I guess....well I'm not an old head. I just have a old soul."37

I turn the radio up and sing a long.

"Late night phone calls on the telephone

About your fantasies and now to get it on

When you need me I will be

There for you my sweet lady"

"You have a nice voice Zayn." She compliments.

"Thanks." I lick my bottom lip.

"I see you remembered my name."

"Yeah....I did." She playfully rolls her eyes.

After five minutes we make it to the liquor store, I hold the door open for her and allow her to go in first. I bite my lips at the sight of her perky behind, it wasn't the fattest but it was something to stare at.

We go to the chip aisle and she picks up a bag of Hot Flamin Funyuns, along with some original cheetos.<sup>26</sup>

"Can I get something to drink too?"<sup>31</sup>

"Get anything you want ma." I say and she slightly smiles and

continue to shop. I go to the freezers and get a large bud light; I'm surprised to see Makiela next to me, she grabs one for her self and walks away. I then I go to the counter where she and the cashier is waiting on me.<sup>30</sup>

"You got everything you wanted?" I ask.

"Yeah I got it." She replies.

I look above the cashier's head and search for the rellos I may want. I lick my lips. "Aye, lemme get the tropical fusion, how that taste?"<sup>10</sup>

"It's good man." He says with a thick accent.

"Lemme get two of them." He hands me them and tells me my total and I give him a twenty dollar bill.

"Go and keep the change." I tell him, Makiela and I then exit



the door and go back to my car.<sup>7</sup>

After a few minutes I decide to spark up a conversation as we drive back to the house. "I thought you wasnt a liquor type of girl."

"Tonight ima have a little fun." She shrugs.

"How's your little girl?" I asked.

"Oh she's fine! She's with my mom and dad, and all her cousins. Me and all my siblings dropped are kids over there because my parents spoil them all with presents."<sup>1</sup>

"That reminds me of my grand parents, they use to keep all the kids on holidays." I chuckle at the memory.

"Don't drink that shit now though....You don't wanna get to fucked up."

"Oh I'm not." She shakes her head and rubs the top of her wavy hair. "Ima drink it when me and Tysis get back to my place....ima only drink a little anyway." She chuckles.<sup>1</sup>

"How old are you?" I question her, as I turn my head her way.

"Twenty. You?"<sup>6</sup>

"Twenty six youngin'." I joke.

"Damn...." She laughs as she opens up her chips, she tilts the bag over to me. "You want some?"

"Nah...them bitches look hot." I chuckle.

"You never had these before?" I ask.

I've been in jail for seven years and didn't even know that exist. "Nah."<sup>34</sup>

"Taste one it's good. It's no different from hot cheetos."

We stop in front of stop sign, and I take a deep breath and decide to take her offer. I take one of the circular shaped chips and bite into it, it was a little spicy but pretty good.

"Hm. It's not as hot as I thought."<sup>7</sup>

"See I told you."

After an hour we decided to just sit in my car and chat, because the party was too live for the both of us to handle. I got to learn a lot about her, she's very goofy but shy at the same time.<sup>5</sup>

We talked about her job and her kid. She told me this was

first time going to a party, she said she didn't have the time to go out as a teen cause she had her daughter. And it hit me that she had her daughter at only fifteen.

I didnt bring it up, because I felt it wasn't my place.

"You ready to go back in?"

"Yah." She pops her jaw and opens the car door and exit out, and I do the same, we enter the house. It seem like a one hundred people arrived since we've been gone. Makiela looked at me, I guess making sure that I was still behind and all of a sudden Tysis and Tayresha come running up to us.

"Really nigga?! Really?!" Tayresha comes up to me looking heated.<sup>1</sup>

"What's wrong with you?" I asked puzzled.

I hear Tysis ask Makiela where was she as she stands close to her.

"Was you really hugged up with this bitch!" Tayresha comes into my personal bubble, intruding my space and yelling at me. Her breath smelled like loud and beer.

"Man chill out a'ight you ain't even my girl!" I shouted.2

"Who the hell are you calling a bitch first off all?!" Makiela folds her arms, staring Tayresha down with a mean mug.8

"Chill Kiela it ai--"

Slap!9

Interupted my sentence and Makiela moaned as she held on to her face.20

"Bitch you got me fucked up don't talk to me like that hoe or will get your ass beat! And im not playing!" Tayresha yells.

Before I can defend Makiela, she pushes Tayresha and starts throwing punches at her, she was winning this brawl, a few of Tay's friends came and jumped in, but I attempted to stop them,they weren't getting Makiela anyway because she was eating those hits and serving some of her own at the same time.<sup>36</sup>

A glass shatters and Tayresha hold on to her head, than looks at her hand that's covered in blood. I looked over at Tysis who holding a broking glass bottle.<sup>43</sup>

To my surprise the lights flickers on and off, the house party then becomes a house fight. The music even gets louder.<sup>18</sup>

"Zayn! Zayn!" I hear Makiela's voice as she calls out for me, as the lights flicker on and off, i get a glampse at her and pull her arm and hold her close to me. A gun then fires, going off at least twenty.

I hear everyone screaming out of fear, the lights come on and I pick up Makiela and grab Tysis hand and try my hardest to get them out of there.28

We make it out to my car safely.

\*\*\*\*

"Oh my God, what the hell happen?" I look over at Makiela and she had no scars on her. I was suprised.

"Resha was on her hood rat shit tonight."

"Where im taking yall?" I ask.

"To her place." Tysis states.

After thirty minutes I drive them home, Tysis gets in the car and Makiela gathers her things.

"So I guess I see you around."<sup>1</sup>

"Lemme see your phone." She rolls her eyes.

"What?"

"Lemme see your phone." She says impatiently, I give her my phone and after a few moments she begins typing and gives it back.

"Call me whenever you want. I feel like we can be good friends." She kisses my cheek and lightly smiles.<sup>8</sup>

"Bye."

"Alright I'll call you." I licked my lips, she gets out the car



and I take my time and watch as both of them walk in.3

Baby girl got a nigga crushing.48

I think to myself, then smirk and put the car in gear and drive off.

So im back guys!!! I promise im gonna start updating more frequently since cold blooded is basically finished.

Im so glad i get to write on this cause boyyyyy i got some bomb ideas!!!! 💕💕

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 7- Getting 2 Know Each Other

I wake up to the sound of my alarm going off. I open my eyes wide and pull the covers off of my body; the cold

temperature in my room was giving me goose bumps. I let my eyes adjust and settle from sun beaming through my window, I was happy to see that it was sunny day, since it's mostly been cloudy and damp.

I finally get out of the bed and use the bathroom. I wash my hands and decide not to brush my teeth until I make me some breakfast, I took a shower when I came home last night so I'm good on hygiene.

I grab my phone then exit my room and jog down my staircase, my living room was a mess and today was the day that I was going to clean up, I'm the type of a nigga who likes a clean place, none of that cluttered shit.<sup>4</sup>

I grab the remote and press the power button and the morning news was on, I then walk into the kitchen and open up the fridge.

I pull out the carton of eggs, along with sausage and stored pancake batter so I can make myself something good to

smash on on. After ten minutes of cooking the news broadcast catches my attention.<sup>1</sup>

"Tayresha Nelson, Antonio Pride, and a young lady by the name of Salena Keystone were all shot dead in a house party last night in South Central near Crenshaw. Witnesses say they did not see the gun man and didn't know what triggered someone to do such a thing."<sup>78</sup>

I rush to the television to see Tayresha's and two other peoples' picture on the screen. My heart feels as if it's about to explode and lead me to hurtful death. My eyes begin to water as I think of her being gone, she wasn't my girl but I had love for her and strong feelings.<sup>90</sup>

"Damn!" I say as I kick the nearest thing I see. I bury my face in my the center of my palms as I sit on the couch and try to let the thought of her being gone and install inside of my mind.

Ring....ring....ring...ring..

I pick up my phone as it rings, the caller id shows that it's Bishop. I press the green button to answer put him on speaker phone.

"Did you see the news man?" He ask.

I suck my teeth and hang my head my low as I run my hand down my face. "Yeah I seen it. What the fuck is going on?"

"That's what I wanna know. What did you do?" Him asking that caught me off guard; I knit my eyebrows together frowning hard as if he can see me.

"What the fuck do you mean what did I do?"

"I know you didn't do nothing coz, rumors going around that you set her up and had one of the girls who came with you peel her cap back and you got her for that insurance money her pops gave her."65

I then begin to angry, these type of lies can not lead me back to the joint. "First of all they didn't come with me!"

"But they left with you." He voices. I then stand up and hover over the phone.

"They came in a Uber! Now you know better than anybody else that I had love for Resha! You know I've been chilling with her since I was 16 so don't play bruh! I would never kill that girl!" I yell, allowing my voice to echo through the house.

"Alright calm down man, I know you wouldn't do that. But I want to know who did shawty and her peeps ain't have to go out like that." He speaks in a low tone.

"How's Tate doin fam?" I questioned.

"He ain't holdin up....I called this morning and he hung up. He not even at the crib."

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🧐 🧨 ♂

"Damn....well let me get my mind together."

"Alright."

I hang up and sit down on the couch. I look up at the ceiling and shed a few tears. Even though me and her wasn't on some lovely dovey type shit that was my shorty, she ain't deserve that. Who would even think to do that to her?37

Makiela4

"So are you feeling Zayn?" Tysis asks as I work on the sewing machine fixing the stitching of a Versace sweater. I smirk and corner my eyes at her.1

"Why don't you just mind your own buisness." I say in a jokeful manner.1



"Oh alright." She smirks as she leans on the wall and look down at her phone, I continue to concentrate of repairing the stitching until I hear Tysis gasp and she looks in shock.

"What's wrong?" I discontinue what I'm doing and stand by her side concerned.

"Tayresha got killed in that shoot out last night." She tells me with tears running down her cheeks.<sup>21</sup>

"Are you serious?! I don't know why that gun even went off!" I say surprised and hurt at the same time. Even though that woman tried me last night she didn't deserve to die. I shake my head and rub my temple in disbelief.

"I don't know either....what the fuck happen?" She questions her self.

"I need a break." I hop out of my chair, and rush to the break room that was cold and a mess with supplies everywhere.

"What has life come to?" I ask myself as I begin to pour myself a cup of coffee. My phone vibrating in my pocket interrupts me, I place the coffee mug on the counter and retrieve my phone from my pocket to see an unknown number. I answer and press the phone against my ear.

"Hello?"

"Yo....is this Makiela?" A deep husky voice flows through my ears.

"Yeah, who is this?"

"Um It's Zayn, I was wondering if you have some time on your hands I really needed someone to talk to. Did you hear what happen to Resha."

I set the coffee down and become more alert. "Yes I heard. And i'm at work but I can get make time, what do you want to do?"

"Oh your at work....its cool I'll be good." He says.

I shake my head. "No no, I can make time Zayn. I'll tell the manager I have a family emergency."

"No make your money, just meet me at the park near that hot dog spot, you know what I'm talking about?"<sup>2</sup>

"Yeah." I pout.

He takes a deep breath and I can hear a door slam on his end. "What time you get off?" He ask.

"3:00." I respond softly.

"Alright I'll be at the park waiting for you at 3:20."

I chuckle. "Alright I'll be there."

\*\*\*\*

I hold my hands in the pockets of my coat since I was cold, today it was 60 degrees freezing, I looked as fog covered my path ahead while I was walking down the sidewalk to get to the park. The sun was out but was hiding behind the clouds for shelter, LA wasn't sunshine and rainbows today.<sup>14</sup>

I finally reached the park, I saw Zayn's car parked by a tree and he was smoking a cigarette as he leaned on his vehicle. He then notice me walking towards him and put his smoke out.<sup>31</sup>

"Hey." I say with open arms as I get closer to him.

He accepts my hug by wrapping his heavy arms around me.  
"Wassup girl."

"You doing okay?" I asked concerned.

"Yeah, let's go and get something to eat. You hungry?"

"Yeah a little." I grin.

"Well lets go."

After twenty-five minutes we arrived at an Bob Evans, we were already sitting down drinking on our beverages, and sitting tight until the waiter comes in take our order.

"So do you know why that happen to her?" I ask Zayn referring to what happened to Tayresha.

"Nah....I want to know why it happen to. Me and her were pretty cool for a long time." His eyes lowers and he bites on his lip. I can tell by his body language that her death was effecting him.

"Wasn't she your ex?" I asked.

"Oh no." He says fairly quickly. "Me and her was never together, she was just a girl I fucked with. You know a frequent booty call every now and then, nothing serious; well at times she thought we were together but it wasn't like that. I started fucking her when I was sixteen she was fourteen at the time...she was a real cool chick and had mad love for a nigga and wanted to tie the loop but I wasn't really into her. "14

I rolled my eyes and shook my head dissapointed at his response, I didn't get how guys had a girl he used as a booty call for so many years.14

I guess he caught on to my attitude because he glances at me. "What's wrong with you?"

"The fact that you just admitted that she loved you and wanted to build a romantic connection with you. But you just used her as your "frequent booty call". " I air quote, then

tend back to my strawberry lemonade.

"Nah nah! It ain't like that I wa--" He begins to get defensive until I cut him off.

"It was exactly like that, I bet you took her virginity and treated her like some type of hoe. You used her and wasted her time and she really wanted to be with you. Now look at you, she's gone. Life is too short to be playing games with people, sometimes you have to look into a person's heart and you'll see they'll have your back before anybody else, but noe guys just play games and miss out on a good thing."<sup>79</sup>

He raises his eyebrow and suck on his bottom lip as he sits back staring at the ground, I can tell by the tears forming in his eye lids my words got to him.<sup>17</sup>

"I'm sorry." I say genuinely. "I-I just got a little upset."

"Nah it ain't that. I liked Resha and had feelings for her. Once upon time I was crazy about her but I never wanted a relationship because one woman broke my heart and made me never wanted to fall in love. But I had feelings for Tayresha and sometimes I did use her to get what I want but I gave her some of my time. I just can't get into that romance shit....I don't think it's for me." He confesses.10

"You never know unless you try it." I shrug.

He barely smiles. "Your right, anyway how is your little girl doing? What's her name?"6

"Her name is Aabria and shes doing fine. She's at my parents house now."

"Oh that's what's up." He nods.

I pick up my phone and press the lock button to show him my lock screen. "Look at her, I bought her an iPad this



Christmas it ran me a lot of money."

"Aww damn, she looks just like you." He grins. "She's beautiful, remind me of my little sister."

I put the phone down and shake my cup a little causing the ice to make noise. "You got kids?" I question.

"No....well not that I know of. I'm pretty sure I don't." He squints as he twist his lips to the side.

"Your funny." I giggle. "How don't you know if you have kids or not."

"Don't know." He grins as he lifts up his shoulders.

"You need to forget it out." I say in a jokeful manner.

"Trust me, I ain't got no kids." He says.<sup>1</sup>

\*\*\*\*

We pull up in front of parents house, I asked can he take me here so I can pick up Aabria and he was more than happy to. He looks at the house that was nice sized from the outside.

"Would you like to come in?" I asked.

"Nah I'm straight." He declines.

"Come on...I don't want you out here by your self. Let's go in."

He smiles and bit, then shut off the engine along with pulling the key from out of the ignition. I open my door and exit the vehicle and he does the same.

Once I reach the door, I rung the door bell and my mother opened it with a wide smile.

"Hello." She says to me than glances at Zayn.

"Hey mom." We both walk into the house and she closes the door. Aabria and her cousins were all knocked out on the couch.

"They is out of it, they've been driving you crazy huh ma?" I asked.

"Girl yes, they finally decided to take a nap and give me a little bit of quiet time. Who is this?" She turns to Zayn with her eyebrow raised.

"This is my--"

Before I could introduce him to her, he spoke. "Hello miss, I'm Zayn and friend of Makiela's." He stretches his arm out for a shake and my mother accepts it.<sup>7</sup>

"Hello Zayn, I'm Nichole. How long have you two been friends?" She ask.<sup>2</sup>

"Well mom..." I begin to trail off. "I met him one night when it was raining, he was nice enough to give me a ride and we met again at a house party last night."

"Oh alright, well that's nice."

"Where's dad?" I questioned.

"He went to work, to get some holiday pay."<sup>1</sup>

"Oh." I nod. "Go ahead and sit down Zayn."

I then walk over to the couch where the sleeping little ones were at. I gently shaked Aabria, to wake her.

"Bri." I whisper into her ear, after a few more shakes she opens her eyes and look at me with a blank expression.

"Hey mommy." She smiles.

I pull her arm, assisting her off the couch. "Wake all the way up baby girl, we gotta go. Go get dress and pack your things." I say softly.

She do as she told and make her way upstairs. My mother smiles at me. "I got you a present, it's in the kitchen."

"You got me a present." I giggled.

"Yeah come on." She begins to walk ahead of me and I follow her. The kitchen smelled like all the type of soul foods in one. I watch goes over to the kitchen table and grab a small black gift bag that was sitting on the chair.

"Aww what is this?" I coo as she give it to me.

"Don't open yet, wait to you get home." She says.

"I'll try." I smile.

She gives me a devious smirk. "So is that your new man?"<sup>1</sup>

"No mom, we are just friends."

"Mm...okay. He's pretty cute." She says.

"I guess."

After a few minutes of talking to my mother I went out to the living to see Aabria and Zayn laughing on the couch as they looked down at her iPad, her our two cousins Daija and Kaia was sitting next to them.<sup>3</sup>

"What are y'all doin?" I asked with a grin.

"Playing fruit ninja, he doesn't know how to work an Ipad."  
Aabria laughs and so the other girls.

"I'm not as advance as you children these days." He jokes.

"What does advance mean?" Kaia ask as she raises her eyebrow.

"It's when you don't have the same speed or modern knowledge that someone else may have. Or your just not up on it." He explains.<sup>4</sup>

"Oh." She nods.

"Are you ready to go?" He ask me.

"Yeah, come on Bri say goodbye to your Granny and cousins." I tell her, she stands up and says her farewell. I grab her book bag and bag of presents.

"Bye everyone." I say as walk out the door, and Aabria along with Zayn follows me. Once we get settled into his car I look back at Aabria playing on her Ipad.

"Did you enjoy your Christmas girlie?" I ask her.

"Yeah, can we go ice skating?"

"Yeah before winter is out." I tell her.

"No! Can we go tonight. "3

I shake my head as Zayn begins to pull out of the drive way.

"No....I don't have money for that right now. Maybe in a few weeks."

"But mom, I want to go ice skating. I never went before." She whines.13

"And you will never go if you keep pouting." I snap.16

She rolls her eyes in sulks into her seating. I did not care about her feelings at this point because she was just being



a total brat.

"Why you gotta crush baby girl feelings like that?" Zayn frowns at me.

I smack my lips in re-position my self into my seat then fold my arms. "I'm not crushing her feelings, she's being spoiled."

"Where's the nearest ice rink...I'll take y'all." He offers.<sup>16</sup>

"Really?!" Aabria's face lit up with joy and I roll my eyes at him.

"No, you don't have to take us anywhere we'll go another time."

"But mommy." Aabria whines as she wraps her arms around my head rest.

"Don't mommy me."

"Girl....stop crushing me and lil mama feelings. She never been ice skating and I haven't either, let us go." He pokes out his lip and lower his head as if he's a child and I roll my eyes, trying hard not to give in but he absolutely looked fine, with his big almond colored eyes and full lips.<sup>10</sup>

"Please mommy! Me and Dane wanna go." I laugh at the fact that he mispronounces his names.

"My name is Zayn." He smiles. "Mama can we go ice skating." He begs.

"Come on let's go." I give in.

"Yay!" They both cheer, I was surprised by Zayn's childish ways.

\*\*\*\*

"

I got you, I'm not gonna let you fall." I watch as Zayn hold both of Aabria's hands and insist her in skating, she seemed startled and it was obvious she was new at this and so was he, but he hid it well.

"Lets go slow." He tells her, and she takes a deep breath a glides both of her blades side to to side.

"There you go. Keep doing that." He instructs.

"Alright....I think it I got it." She says.

"You do?" He asks for confirmation. "Will on the count of five, ima let go."

"Okay." She says.

"1....2.....3....." He releases one of her hands, now only holding one.

"4.....5....." He lets go and she begins to skate on her own.

"I'm doing it! Mom look! I'm doing it!" She cheers.

"I see you baby!" I smile at her.

She skates away, and Zayn slowly glides his self over to me and leans on the rail and stares at Aabria carefully, I kind of felt offended by the way he smiled at her....it seem creepy.73

"Are you okay?" I questioned.

"Yeah she reminds of me my little sister, she loves to

skate."

"You have a sister her age?" I ask.

"Yeah....you want to skate with me?"<sup>16</sup>

"Sure." I shrug.

After two hours we finally ended our fun at the ice skating rink and made it to my place. The moon and stars was out and I could hear the crickets chirping. Zayn run his hand across his face and shut the engine off. I exit the vehicle and he does the same.

He opens the back door and pick up sleeping Bria.

"You didn't have to pick up her big self."

"I got her." He chuckles. We approach my door step before unlocking the door I retrieve my mail from the mail box and

them open the door, Zayn follows behind as I walk in.

"You can just lay her on the couch Zayn." I tell him.

"Alright." He grunts as he lay her gently on the love seating, I walk over to my table and skim through my mail, I got one from the a loaning buisness that I was hoping could help get to the funds to get into The Fashion Institute of Design & Merchandising. It has been dream institute for years. I ripped it open and begin to read the letter inside of my head.

Dear Ms.Randall, we appreciate you for reaching out but we can not help with a loan for 15,000 dollars to attend The Fashion Institute of Design & Merchandising, your loan has been denied but we wish you the best.

- LA Loaning Team.

"Really?" I suck on to my teeth and toss the paper on the table.

"What's wrong?" Zayn ask, I was too into the letter that I didn't even realize that he was standing beside me. I turned to him and faked a smile.

"I'm fine Zayn. Thank you for treating me and my daughter to such a good day."

"It's nothing, we all deserve some fun sometimes." He shoves his hands in his pocket. "Can we be friends."

"We are friends Zayn." I giggle. "Your one of the closet friends I have right now." I confess.

"Is that so?" He ask.

"Yeah."

"Can I take you out again one day?"

"If you want, I wouldn't mind." I was nearly blushing, he was

really charming.

"Alright, well make plans." He hugs me. "I'll talk to you soon."

"Okay ." I walk to the door to let him out. He walks out but turn around and plants a soft kiss on my cheek.

"Good night beautiful." He says in his husky voice.

I bite on my bottom lip to keep from smiling so hard, he had me weak in the knees but I wasn't going to let him see it.<sup>7</sup>

"Good night Zayn." I wave as he walks out and goes to his car. I closed the door and smiled.

\*\*\*\*

Zayn



I shut the engine off after parking into my drive way. I yawned, the day with Makiela was fun but wore me out. It felt good to relieve some stress though. I take the key out of the ignition and exited my car.

I reached my door step and unlocked the door then entered my dark home before I could turn the lights on I felt a presence near me a long with a gun pressed to my temple.

"You ready to die?" The gun man asked.

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 8- Lose Something But Win Something

Zayn

"You ready to die?"

I felt myself tensing up but I wasn't scared, nothing was running through my mind at this point. The lights then turned on and I cornered my eyes, and saw that my boy Tate was the trigger man.<sup>23</sup>

I sucked my teeth and rolled my eyes. "Look Tate you know I had lo--"

"Shut the fuck up!" I was punched in my stomach him. I groaned and kneeled down in pain, I then was kicked in my back, now laying on the cold floor looking straight at him.

Tate genuflected beside me, and aimed the gun close to face. "You killed my sister g?" He asks with a serious expression forming his face.<sup>2</sup>

"Nah, you know I wouldn't play you like that. You got the wrong person T. Put the gun down and let's talk this shit

out."

"Where the money at?" He ignores my suggestion.

"I ain't got no money okay? I say in a calm tone. "I would never do this to you fam, I loved your sister too. Remember I knew you since we was in middle school.....we fought together it ain't no way I would come out of the pin and set you up. It ain't no way."

Tate looked down at the ground, I could tell a nigga been crying cause his face was blood shot red along with his eyes. I truly felt bad for him he didn't deserve this.

"Explain to me why your girl jumped on her?" He ask. "You and them hoes ain't set her up?"

"Look man, Resha started that fight. She approached me....and we start arguing over some petty shit and that's when she went off on ol girl."3

"You know what nigga....I don't even believe yo' ass." He stands up and cocks the gun back. I then tackled him to ground as he pulled the trigger and we begin to fight over his gun. I didn't want to hurt him, my main objective was just to remove the gun from his presence.

As he was throwing shots in the air pointing the gun up, I lowered it down, I can feel the heat of it and that startled me but I wasn't going to let one of my best friends take my life over a lie.

"Put the gun down nigga, I ain't kill her!" I scream to try to convince him. He pressed the gun into my side, but I pushed it away, abruptly it went off and blood splatted every where. I looked up to see that I wounded my friend in the head on accident.<sup>62</sup>

"Damn!" I hissed.

\*\*\*\*

"Put him in the back of the truck, yall know what to do get it done. Don't talk to nobody, do the job." I hear Bishop say to his goons, after doing what I did. I called him because he was the only one who could help me in this situation Tate was his closest friend and his trap runner, I could see how he was feeling about.

I sit on my couch and stare down at the ground, with my hands intertwined together and pressed against my mouth. What just occurred had me devastated, I didn't want it to go down like this.

"Aye...." Bishop grips my shoulder and sits beside me. "Don't sweat it man."

"I killed our nigga g. All I wanted to do was take the gun away from him and explained to him that I didn't do that shit to Resha. I'm sorry man."<sup>23</sup>

"Look nigga....you ain't got nothing to be sorry about, you did what you had to do to defend your self. Bruh tried to kill you....you did what you had to do....im not mad." He tells me.1

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔫 🧱 ♂

I sit back and stare at ceiling. "It was an accident. What if Resha and his death lead me back to me....then what? I can't get locked up again B."

"And won't, just calm down alright. " He assures to me.

"He was the leader of the trap though....ima need you to take his place at some point."19

I ignore his statement and lean back. I wasn't pressed into talking about that right now. If he was here I wouldn't have to take his place.

"Calm down Zay...everything gon be cool."

It hurt me to know that I was responsible for Tate's death. I



don't think it anything cool was going to come out of this.

1 Month Later.

It's been a month since everything went down, I didn't even attend Tayresha or Tate's funeral, it was too much for me to experience.

Since Tate is gone Bishop got me running the trap, I didn't want to do it but he's been helping so I gotta help him too. I just gotta be careful with who i associate with and how I handle my buisness.<sup>5</sup>

One slip up can land my ass back in the pin and I don't need that shit. I stored grams and pounds of weed in sandwich and zip lock bags, a long with cocaine and pills.

A hard knock pressed againts the door, then it opened. I looked back to see Bishop and a few others individuals walking in.

"Wassup coz?" Bishop ask.

"Nigga you know you can't be strolling up in here like that." I snicker, then look at the young niggas who's behind him.

"You know who this is right?" He asked pointing back at one of the youngins

"Nah." I rubbed my head.

"This lil Mikey man."

I then looked in shock, Lil Mikey is Bishop's younger brother, I haven't saw little dude since he was ten.

"Word!" I stand up with a wide smile on my face and fist covering my mouth. I walk over to him and give him a brotherly hug.

"Wassup little man, you got big. You remember me?"

"You know I remember you Zay." He chuckle. "Damn this the trap though." He rubs his hands together and walk over to the table that consisted all of the supply, I then gave Bishop a stern look once I realized he brought a six teen year old to the work of buisness. This was no place for a kid.8

"Why you got him here man?" I asked.

"He cool, chill out."

I looked over at Lil Mikey as he picked up one of the rolled blunts and placed it in his mouth,

"You smoke lil man?" I asked.

"Aw, my bad. You mind if I light this."

"You good bro." Bishop waves him off. "I got him and some

of my other niggas who gon help out with this shit, they gon stand out on the corner, sell the dope and return with the money. All you gotta do is get the supply ready for them."10

"I don't know about about all of this, what if some of these little niggas you bringing into this get us locked up."

"They not all lil niggas a'ight i got some few hitters that been a game for five , ten years just stop worrying man."

"Whatever....just don't do nothing to get me caught up."

Another knock is then heard at the door, Bishop looks out the window to see who it is. "Aye, here go some of the niggas right here. I got a little meeting to host."11

He opens the door and five dudes walk in, they all are grown men, which calms my nerves a bit. He greets them all and give them daps, they nodded at me and I did the

same.

"I want to introduce yall to the new pusherman of the city....this is Zayn. Y'all all know he takin the og Tate's spot, y'all heard of him....yall better not disrespect my fam, he just got out the pin and he has no patience for bullshit, so if he has to call you out and tell me about it, then a nigga gon' get fucked up and I mean what I say."

They all nod their heads in agreement.

"Boss....." Bishop taps my chest andnstarts to point at all of this guy.. "This is Ray, Quell, Marcus and Jaison....this ain't even all of your niggas, i got more. They all gon make it easier on you, they'll make it so easy that your ass won't even need to be here half of the time."26

"Cool cool." I nod.

"Yall get on them corners and hold my nigga down...Yung!"2

"Wassup?" Mikey responds.

"You and Jai go with Zayn show him where the other niggas at....we gotta re up." He says.4

\*\*\*\*

"

So why come here Mikey?" I asked Lil Mikey as we enter my vehicle.

"Man you ain't gotta call me Mikey, just call me yung." He insists.6

I shurg as I put on my seat belt and nod my head. "Well why you come here Yung?"

"Shit..." he rubs his hand across his face. "B finally giving me a chance....I always wanted to be in the game like him and pops and you. I'm tryna eat too."

"You in school?" I questioned, not satisfied with his response.

"Nah...I don't need that shit. Bishop said ima make thousands by next year."37

I nod my head in dissapointment, I knew little dude was better than this. I hate seeing young brothas throw thier life away like I once did. The shit ain't worth it. I put the key in the ignition starting the engine, then I pull off.

"You can make millions if you get a scholarship and do football....I saw the videos of you doing on your thing on Facebook, your mama always posting you. You good man, why come out here and start this dope shit?"

He stares at the ground, and hold a concentrating look on his face as if he's thinking of good response. While waiting for an answer, I roll the windows up and turn on the heat since it was pretty cold today.

"I ain't really feeling football no more fam..to be honest. I rather be a King Pin, instead of a football player what if I get injured or something?" He questions.54

I take a deep breath and lift my right shoulder as I nod my head in what he think is agreement. "Well what if you become a hot nigga and get shot in the streets because you wasn't watching your back hard enough or something?"

He bends over in his seat while laughing, I didn't find anything funny about my comment. "Yo that shit ain't never gonna happen,"1

Ol dude in the back seat was also laughing. I turned back at him then looked back at the road. "What about you why you get in the game."

"I just lost one of my jobs not so long ago. So i just decided hook up with B and get some paper he responds."



I nodded while looking at him through the rear view it seem like I knew him from so where but I couldn't place the face. I seen his face somewhere.18

Makiela

I sat at my dining room table, drawing new designs since I had the chance. The small lamp hovered over my scrap book, the dress I was creating was flawess already and couldn't wait to get to sewing.

I know im talented, I just got to put myself ot there. These schools and jobs aren't giving me a chance though and I'm lost at what I should do. I'm tired of repairing stitching, it's time for me to become a stylist and designer, I have to start some where.2

A heavy knock at my door tears me away from my thoughts. I take a deep breath and slowly get up, then approach my door. I looked through the peep hole to see Zayn on my door step.

He has some nerve. I thought to myself. The last time I seen or talked to him was last month when we went ice skating, I called and texted his phone but he never got to me, that made me felt ignored.

I open the door, a strongly mug him with my hand placed on my hip. "May I help you?"

"I came to see how you were doing. I was in the neighborhood."

"I haven't heard from you in a month....what do you really want?"

"Well at 3:00 in the afternoon I just want to take you and your daughter out to eat and go see a movie maybe." He shrugs. "I'm sorry that I haven't kept in contact....I lost Tayresha and her brother...they were close people."

"Oh yeah....I'm sorry for your lost. Did you go to her funeral."

"Yeah they had one together since they both passed a way a day apart." He tells.<sup>14</sup>

I grab his hand and pull him into my apartment. "Come in and have a seat." I say genuinely.

"Coo." He rubs his hands together in sit in my spot at my table and glance down at my drawing.

"What's this?" He ask,

"My new design." I reply as I sit across from him.

He looks through the book and grins at every piece of art he sees. "What?! This is nice girl." He says in amazement "You ever thought about submitting it some where." He ask as he turns the page and squints at the page.

"It's not that easy." I raise my eyebrow and gnaw at my bottom lip. He nods his head and close the book, then looks back at me.

"Where baby girl at?" He questions.

"In the back taking a nap, she shoul--"

Before I can finish my sentence Aabria comes walking in the room with a tired look on her face but when she sees Zayn her whole mood changes.

"Zayn!" She yells and runs over to him and gives him a tight hug.

"Hey little one." He rubs her back gently, I seen that he had enough respect not sit her kn his lap, he patted on the chair next to him and she sat down.10

"Where have you been?" She ask in a sad tone.

"Aw man Bri, I've been so busy that's why I haven't visited you guys in a while but I'm here, how have you been?"

"Good!" She smiles. "Guess what?!"

"What?" He squints his eyes in a playful matter and pokes out his lip.

"I'm gonna be a figure skater!" She tells him as she jumps out of the seat and spin around like a ballerina.

"What is that?" He ask, his eyes then lock on me.

"Ever since you took her ice skating she decided that she wanted to be a ballerina that dances on ice."1

"For real?" He ask in amusement with a smile, then he hold his hand up for a high five. "That's what's up little mama! I'm glad to hear that."

She gives him a high five and smiles. "Thank you!"

"So when did you start?" He questions.

"She hasn't I have to start saving up for the classes it's 680 dollars a month....I don't have that type of money right off hand."

Aabria smacks her lips and holds a sad frown upon her face. "Mommy said maybe next year I can start."

"Well don't be sad, you'll get to live out your dream real soon." He reassure to her.

"Would y'all like to go out and enjoy the sunny the day?" He raises his eyebrow and his eys shifts to the both of us.

A wide smile appears on face and she nods her head. "Yes!"

"Well what are you trying to do?" I ask.

He sulks in the chair and shoves his hands in his pocket.  
"It's a surprise for little mama, I'll tell you on our way there."

"Well we gotta take showers and get dress, you know get our selves together." I tell him.

"Okay well yall take all the time you need, I can wait." He says in a understanding tone, then he gets up and sit on my couch. "You mind if I watch TV?" He says as he grabs the remote from the coffee table.

"Go ahead." I smile. "Alright Bri, let's get ready."

"Where going somewhere! Where going somewher!" She sings loudly as she skips down the hall way this little girl was too happy.<sup>15</sup>

After an hour I manage to bathe both Aabria and I. I got her

dressed in a hello kitty jogging suit that was colored maya blue and had a touch of pink in it, and place her poofy hair into two puff balls with a pink head band.

I sported a close fitted dress that complimented my curves, showing off my thick thighs, it also made my behind appear bigger. The color of the dress was magenta red, the same color of my lip stick. I think the color fits me.

I let my curly hair hang freely and placed a black beanie on my head along with a same colored scraf around my neck. We were already to go.

I entered my living room and saw Zayn rushing over to the couch as if he just did something sneaky. I squinted my eyes at him as he looked at the television.<sup>13</sup>

"What did you just do?" I asked.

He looks up at me in confusion, as he sits up and licks his full lips. "What did you just do? Why are you acting so



suspicious?"

"I'm not." He chuckles, then he stands up and his tall body hovers over mine. I roll my eyes and begin searching through all his pocket.

"Yo what are you doing?!" He laughs.

"Did you just steal from me?" I ask in a serious voice as I cock my head to the side. I would hate to think that he came into my home and did such a thing.<sup>14</sup>

"Girl....no. I wouldn't do that come on now." He straight faces me.

"What did you do then Zayn?"

"Fine....I ate all of your cookies. Sorry." I look over at the table and the container of Chip Ahoy! was clearly empty. I

opened my mouth wide and begin laughing.63

"Oh my gosh, you are so bold for that."

"My bad." He chuckles. "Are y'all ready to go?"

"Yeah, Aabria come on we're leaving." I yell out for my daughter as I bend down and pick up my house key from the coffee table.

"Okay just let me go pee pee first!" She says.

"Aye Kiela?" Zayn says in his deep husky voice, I turn around and noticing him checking me out, rubbing his hands together while biting down on his bottom lip.

"Yes?" I stand up straight and stare back at him.

"You're beautiful." He says with a small smile. I then start to blush, and corner my eyes to ths side. "Thank you Zay."

His phone ringing breaking are moment of staring, he pulls his iPhone 6s out of his pocket and answers it the puts it up to his ear.

"Wassup?" He ask the person on the other line. "Bishop want you to do what? Alright man...just come bring it to me im about to be somewhere in a minute I'll send you the directions."2

\*\*\*\*\*

Zayn surprise for Aabria was the Zoo, which was nice because believe it or not she has never been to one. I stood beside Zayn as he he held Aabria up so she could pet the giraffe who was being secured in glass cage but hus head was so tall that it went over the rim.

"He's pretty."

"Yep." Zayn responded. I could tell that he like kids because since we've been here he's been spoiling Aabria like crazy, buying her slushies, cotton candy, hot dogs. He's been super sweet.

I could tell Aabria was happy too, its like she clinged to him. I guess she sees something in him.<sup>18</sup>

"Can I ride a camel Zayn?" She ask as she plays with his diamond chain.

"You sure you can handle it?"<sup>4</sup>

"Yeah." She smiles.

"Alright let's go ride the horse then lil mama." We then leave the exhibit of giraffes' and start walking through out the zoo to find the camel. After a few minutes we find them, Zayn goes take Aabria in the line and I lean on the fence as I wait on them, I watch as the Zoo workers places her on the camel and she seems happy.

I glance over at the sign of rules.

Please do not disturb the peace while peoples' are camel riding, or the camels can be come upset.4

1. AVOID YELLING!

2. DO NOT THROW THINGS/OBJECTS TOWARDS THE CAMEL!

3. IF CHILD IS RIDING, THEY MUST BE 5 AND UP!

The workers and Zayn exchange a few words, and he walks back over to me and lean on the fence as well.

"Was she scared?" I asked.

"No she's ready, all the camels are tied together with a rope so they won't go too fast and go at the same pace, it's just a ten minutes ride around the land she'll be fine, we just gotta wait here."

"Alright." I squint as the LA sun shine brightly on my face, I look down to avoid the light and begin to play with my charm bracelet, the wind starts to come hard, causing my curly hair to fly, I look at Zayn as he texts away on his phone.

"So where do you work?" I questioned to break the silence between us.

"I work for my cousin." He replies.

"You work for your cousin doing what?"

He folds his lip and chuckles a little."He has a carpenting buisness."33

"A carpenting business can help you afford a 2016 beamer?" I smirks as I turn around and lean againts the fence as I fold my arms.

"Yeah if you save up like I do." He licks his lips and stares

down at my short figure.

"Hmm alright....so where are you from?"

He plays with the draw strings of his Polo Jacket and twist his mouth to the side. "I was born in Chicago but raised in South Central

...so this is home to me."

"That's cool." I say.

"So you want to be a designer?" He ask as he stands closer to me and we both give each other eye contact.

"Yeah and a stylist....I've been trying my hardest to get in FIDM...but it seems like effort just ain't working."

He wraps his arm around me, I feel butterflies dancing around my stomach as his strong colonge soothes my mood. "What's that?" He asks.1

"Fashion Institute of Design Merchandise." I say softly.

"You need a scholarship to get in there?"

"Yeah." I say in a disappointing tone, because I know that I would never be able to get in there.

"Don't worry one day you'll get that scholarship ma. Just be patient." He tells me.<sup>7</sup>

I roll my eyes and straight face him. "No I won't, that scholarship cost a grip and I ain't got that kinda money."<sup>5</sup>

His phone then interrupts us again he takes a deep breath while unwrapping his arm from around my neck and pulls it out from his pocket and answers.

"Yo? I'm by the camels and shit....you should see me by the little fence and I'm with a girl who's wearing a red



dress...alright."

"Who's that?" I ask as I rub my lips together, and move a portion of my from out of my face.<sup>1</sup>

"A friend of mine, he's just giving me some money he owes me."<sup>2</sup>

We look back and the camels come back from their ride.

"You wanna go get her? I gotta stand her and wait for this dude."

"Yeah I got her." I nod my head, then get to Aabria and she looked so happy.

"Was it fun?" I asked her as I helped her off the Camel and placed her on her feet on the ground so we can walk back over to Zayn?

"Yeah! Where's Zayn, did he leave?" She questions what seemed to be a worried tone.<sup>1</sup>

"No he's still here." I tell her. As we got closer to him she ran ahead of me and went over to him and I couldn't help but notice that he was exchanging something with a young man who had on a hoodie and looked like a absolute hoodlum. He picks up Aabria and continue to talk to the guy.<sup>1</sup>

As I got closer I noticed that it was Jayson, I stomped my way over there and frowned at him, he didn't look to pleased to see me either.<sup>20</sup>

"What are doing here?" I snapped.

"Y'all know each other?" Zayn ask.

"This your girl?" Jayson points at me and looks closely at

Aabria, I guess he was surprised that she was a spitting image of his self, I was shocked that he didn't recognize her when she ran up to them, what a dead beat. That explains why Aabria is frowning so hard.<sup>4</sup>

"Yeah." Zayn replies.<sup>11</sup>

"Why you got another nigga around my daughter." Jayson comes closer to me and stares me down with his fist clenched together. I had no time to play with him.<sup>44</sup>

"Don't come at me with that bullshit! You're not even participating in my daughter's life!"

"Damn! I knew I seen your face somewhere bro!" Zayn says as if a light bulb pops off in his head, he looks at Aabria then at Jayson. "She looks just like you, that's what it was... dang."

"Man how long have you been around my daughter." He asks Zayn.

"Well I'm not a nigga that Kiela just got around...I just take them out sometimes fam. I don't be all up in the house doing things to disrespect you or your daughter."

I raise my hands up a little and shake my head in disbelief. "Zay you ain't gotta explain shit to him, he hasn't been in her life in five years. You ain't disrespecting no one."

"Oh word..." he frowns and looks back at Jayson in dissatisfaction. "You can leave dog, I'll talk to you."

"Let me talk to my daughter man." He says as he reaches his arms out for Aabria.

"No!" She yells and lays her head on Zayn shoulder. I don't know what exactly possessed her to scream like that.<sup>56</sup>

Jayson waves her off and mugs me as if I'm the one who told her to do such a thing. "Man whatever" He then storms

off.

Zayn and I both looked around noticing that all eyes were on us, we caused a major a scene. I was now embarrassed that I acted out the way I did.<sup>7</sup>

"You ready to go to dinner?" He ask.

"Yeah let's go....I need a drink or something now cause his bitch ass made me mad." I rub both of my temples as I air in my throat, this situation spun my whole mood around; how could he just snap on me like that?

Zayn places his hand on my shoulder and kisses my forehead. "Just calm down okay." His husky voice flows through my ears soothing me.

After two hours we ate at Golden Coral and finally made it back to place, as always Aabria was sleep so Zayn had to carry her inside; I took her from him and laid her down in

her bed. Then came back into the living room, gripped the dining room table and held my head low as I felt overwhelmed from what happen today.2

"Are you okay?" Zayn ask as he wraps his strong arms around my waist and lays his head in the crook of my neck.

"I'm okay Zayn.....Jayson just irritates me to the max. He's never been in my childs life and it hurts her but it also hurts me too, cause my daughter deserves a father."

"Well you can't force a man to step up, sometimes you gotta carry the load on your own and as she grows up she can see your struggle and pain and thank you for that. Your not alone though....you got me." He tells me.13

I turn around and lift head up as I hold onto his waist. "You are the nicest person on earth, you know that?"

"I try to be nice." We have a moment in silence, it take

sometime to look into each others eyes, he then his latches his lips on mine. And he smiles. The butterflies began to spring around my stomach again, I then become shy.

"I'm here for you anytime you need me." He tells. For some reason I didn't believe him and my nervousness turned into rejection towards him. I pulled away from him and faked a smile.<sup>17</sup>

"Um thank you for today, you always treat Bri and me to something special and I appreciate it." I say.

"I got you. Ima go cause I got things work in the morning." He licks his lips. "Goodnight." He says his farewell as he walks towards the door.

"Good night." I smile, he then exits the house.

After putting on my pajamas and getting settled I enter the dining room and turn on the light. Then I approach my purse

in search for my lip balm, once I go into it I was surprised to see a bundle of cash. I quickly took it out of its place and it was thousands of dollars, all hundreds nothing else. I also found a small note.13

For Aabria's ice skating lessons. This should last for nine months. I want her to live out her dreams and I know you do too.98

- Zayn

"Daddy do you love me? And if so why you wasn't there to hug me to watch me grow? Yo, this is what it sound like, growing up with out ya own father in your life." ~Mac  
Father's Day

Zayn



Ring....ring....ring....

The annoying ringtone went off from my phone, I groaned as I turned to the other side of the bed, and reached up to the night stand to grab it, I looked at the identification and it showed up to be Makiela, I then calmed down and answer.

"Hello?" I sat up and rubbed my eyes.

"Zayn what do you want from me?" She asks. I knit my eyebrows together now alert.<sup>3</sup>

"What do you mean? You called me."<sup>22</sup>

"No...why did you stash all this money in my bag, what do you want from me?!" She questions in a harsh tone. I take a deep breath and rub my forehead.

"Kiela, I don't want anything from you. I just want your

daughter to be able to do what she wants that's all, a'ight?" I tell her.

"No you don't!" She whines. "Your trying to buy me, I'm not having sex with you no time soon...so stop trying to play these childish ass games!"<sup>25</sup>

I bite on my lip and shake my head shocked at what she just said, that wasn't even close to my intentions. "Kiela....I don't want sex from you okay? The money is yours, let yall daughter be a ballerina."<sup>3</sup>

"I don't believe you Zayn, I feel like your only being nice to me and my daughter so you can get in my pants....I don't think you really like me." I hear her snuffle. From her voice I can tell that she was broken and something triggered her to to feel this way. I hung up the phone and climbed out of my bed, After a few minutes I placed on some Nike Sweats along with my shoes and a black hat.<sup>22</sup>

I then grabbed my keys to start my journey over Makiela's place. It was almost 4am but I didnt mind making this trip

for her, some things are better said face to face than over the phone.<sup>12</sup>

After thirty-five minutes I made it over to her crib, I softly knocked on the door and waited for her to answer. A few seconds went by and she opened the door. "What are you doing here?" She ask in confusion.

I entered her home then and closed the door behind me. I grabbed her soft hands and looked into her big brown eyes. "Makiela I came all the way over here to tell you that I don't want anything out of the ordinary from you, that money is for your daughter you don't have to pay me back....I did that because I know its hard for you to be a single mother, and I know sometimes you may need help because you don't have all the support you need. I just wanted to help. Every child deserves to live out thier dreams, I don't want you to pay me back, I don't want sex in return. I am feeling you and I think your very beautiful....I can see us being together. But I can also see us being great friends."<sup>1</sup>

"Zayn....I really like you. But Jayson made it hard for me to

trust anyone. He was my first of all. First kiss, first time, and I thought he was my first boyfriend and my first love....but all he did was take my virginity and leave me alone and pregnant. For the last five years, I have been heart broken...he made me feel ugly and made me feel like I wasn't good enough to find somebody who really love and care for me. I was just another hoe to him, when really I was just a girl desperate for love and affection. He never loved me....he just used me."24

I lift up her chin and gaze into her dark almond colored eyes. "Baby listen, you can't hold on to that pain. You gotta let it go, you can't bring all that baggage into a new relationship. Close that chapter and open a new book. I honestly really like you too....I think your beautiful, funny, sweet. I can cure that broken heart if you let me." I say truthfully.14

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔪 🧨 ♂

"I don't wanna too move fast."

"Okay and I won't rush you."

She looked at me as if I said something that was so shocking to her and she never heard it before.

"You won't rush me?" She ask.

"No we'll move at your pace Kiela, I don't want to pressure you in anything."

She rolls her eyes and gasp as she hold on to her chest. "Oh God....he's talking right! Prayer works!" She points up to the ceiling, I smile at her dramatics.<sup>31</sup>

"Those words may open up new book." She wraps her small arms around my waist, and looks up at me with a smile.

"Really?" I questioned. "Makiela, would you be my girl? If you

don't want to understand."

"H-how about we start dating but we have to wait to have sex. We have to learn everything about each other you know? When I was in high school I wanted a boyfriend that I could relate with and know everything about, like go on dates and just talk. You know? I'll be your girl I just want something innocent and real." Her eyes wetted, I can tell that she was serious.<sup>1</sup>

"I'm down with that baby, well move at your pace alright?"

"Zayn? "

"Yes Kiela?"

"I'm your girl friend now? Like we date, your not ashamed to show me off to your family and friends?" She asks me in a baby tone.<sup>28</sup>

"Yes baby your my girlfriend, my one and only girlfriend. I would never be ashamed of you, if you want to me my



friends you can. But Kiela, I want you to slow down okay....You don't have to rush into this if you don't want to, if you wanna remain friends and then we get together we can do that. I can wait for you."

"Zayn....I just want to know how it feels to be in a relationship. I never had a boyfriend before.....I just want to know how it feels to be liked and maybe loved. If you don't want to be with me tha--"

"I want to be with you Kiela." I cut her off, I then kneel down a little and slip my tongue in between her lip and we begin to french kiss. I lay her on the couch and hover over her and I sense her being nervous.<sup>2</sup>

"We're not having sex, I'm just gonna plant my love on you."<sup>40</sup>

"Okay." She smiles, I then bend down and plant soft kisses on her neck along with chest. She breathes on my neck and I look at as she closes her eyes and bites on her lip, I then

kiss her lips.7

"Your so beautiful." I tell her.

"Thank you." She caresses my cheek.

A Few Weeks Later.

I pull up to the trap, since the youngins and some of the goons have been holding it down for me I don't have to be here all of the time. I turn off my car and as I get out I look at the beer cans and ciggarate butts on ground.3

I try my hardest to keep the lawn clean , im a business man; my trap doesn't look suspect like others, by the looks of it people would just some assume its a nice family home;can't have the cops lurking.3

I enter the house and slam the door. I was dissapointed to see smoke clouds, hoes and crack heads everywhere. Music was blasting through out the home, all of my hitters were gambling in the corner; and didn't seem to notice me. I stood

behind Kell and gripped his shoulder tightly, He drops the dice and everyone looks up at me.

"What the fuck is going on?!" I say furious. "Why these hoes in here? Why these heads in here? What y'all tryna do?!"

"It's a trap man, they can be in here." Lil Mikey says.

"One of these hoes can be working with the feds, one these heads can snitch. Y'all know im serious about buisness, I told yall when I started running this that I didn't want the place to look suspect. Get these motherfuckers out of here, and clean all of this shit up." I demand, then pull the blunt from behind my ear place it between lips along with lighting it.<sup>2</sup>

I give everyone a stern look as I walk pass them slowly, I make my to the back of the house and go into the room where most of cash is supposed to be stored in. I walk in to see Jayson sitting at the desk and counting the stack of the money in his hand.

"Wassup?" I say as I puff on the blunt. He corners his eyes towards me, and shakes his head and continue mumbling the numbers.

"I haven't been seeing you in the streets in awhile. All of the niggas except your self have been giving me my dough on time, but it seems like you holding out on me man, a few of your homies even told me you've been keeping some of my coins to ya self. You ain't disrespecting me because I'm with your baby mama now, are you?" I lean on the door frame while staring him down, I knew that me being with Kiela bothered him; because he's been acting shady ever since.

"N-n-nah man, I've just been out minding my business. I haven't been out on the streets that much cause um I've been busy but I'll have your money." I observe as his hands trembles, he finally looks up at me in I see the anger behind his eyes.<sup>14</sup>

"I need my money today fam, cause all the cash goes to B

and then he gotta give it to the big dogs and then the real money start flowing in."

"Alright I'll see what I can do." He says.<sup>7</sup>

"Tell me something bruh.....why you not in your daughters' life?" I walk over to him and lean on the chair beside him, I let the smoke from my blunt invade his space. "That's a pretty little girl, why you don't want her? Why let a fine ass girl like Kiela slip out of fingers like that dog?"<sup>6</sup>

"Man I ain't gotta explain nothin to you a'ight You want to take my place you do that, I don't care." He snaps, then he leans back in the chair and rubs his face with both hands.

"So....you don't care about that little girl?"

"It ain't that I don't care about her....I just-- I had her when I was 14.....being a 14 year old dad is hard. I couldn't buy her diapers and shit, I couldn't provide for her.....and then Kiela

was too clingy....I ain't wanna deal with allat shit."20

"Well your nineteen now right? You can be a father....you can afford to buy your daughter clothes and toys. You got it like that now." I tell him genuinely.

"I ain't raising that little girl, that's her daughter."46

I nod my head in understanding, in put my blunt out into the ashtray on the desk and I stirke him in the face with my fist catching him off guard and causing him to jerk back.49

"Is it hard being father?! All you gotta do is be there?! You let her raise your seed on her own for five motherfuckin' years!" I ram him into the wall and grip his shirt.

"Is it hard giving your daughter a phone call? Hm? Answer me?!" My voice boom through out the room,

"Nah man." He says frantically and shakes his head.

"You got a dad in your life?" I asked him.

"He died when I was 13."

I nod my head. "He cared for you right, he lived with you and helped your mama up into his death?"

"Y-y-yeah he did." He stutters, I can tell that he was startled by me.

"Well why you can't do the same for your daughter!" I kneed him in the stomach causing him to kneel down and groan in pain.

"I ain't never had no daddy man, and that ade me feel like I wasn't shit and that I wasn't important enough for him. And you allow your baby girl, your spitting image, your seed! You allow her to feel that way?"<sup>3</sup>

I grab him by his shirt and turn him over. "You a pussy! You can't do shit for this establishment.....you cant be one of my hitters cause you scared of changing diapers and shit! Nigga you better run me all of my money by tonight!"<sup>35</sup>

I exited the house frustrated, then entered my car and my phone began to ring.

"Hello?" I answered without looking at the identification.

"Hey Zay." I then heard Makiela's voice.

"Hey baby wassup?" I put my key in the ignition and pull out of the drive way.

"I just called to see what you were doing, I'm on my lunch break." She tells me, I can hear her multiple voices in the background.<sup>1</sup>



"Nothing I'm just out and about, but baby do you know what today is?" I ask her with a small grin on face as I look at my rear view mirror.

"What Zay?"

"Our two week anniversary." I say proudly, I hear her small giggles on the other line I knew that line melted her heart.<sup>58</sup>

"How did you remember and I didn't?"

These two weeks that I have been involved with Makiela has been very special, we've got to know more about each other. It's kind of like that were not even a relationship were just close friends, I feel like I'm in high school again.<sup>3</sup>

"I got you something special..."

"Zaaayyn." She whines. "I don't have any money so I can't get you anything, why are you doing this?"

"All I wanna do is see you at my place....alright?" I tell her.

"I can finally come to your place?" She asks surprisingly, I haven't brought her over to my crib because its a mess I've been doing some serious cleaning to keep it spotless for her.

"Yeah....im gonna order you a Uber, ima pay for it and everything. Come by at 7:30, ima text you my address." I tell her.8

"Alright, I'll be there."

"Okay little mama, I'll see you then."

"Bye boo." She hangs up and smile to myself. I pull into

Bishop's drive way and shut off the engine. I then take a minutes in sit back, I think about the situation between Jayson and Aabria, it only leads me to start reminiscing about the pass.

Age 11

My mother's boyfriend gets off my bed and exits my dark bed room, I tricked him into thinking I fell asleep after he did one of his routines on me.<sup>18</sup>

Tonight he had to work a midnight shift and my mother was at my grandmother's house taking care of her, so it was up to me to take care of my sister and I through out the night.

I laid in the bed for ten whole minutes until I finally heard the front door shut, the loud thud caused my baby sister to wake up from her sumbler. I didn't mind I was just glad that he was gone.

I went into my mother's room and picked my one year old sister Leyana from out of her crib, then I went into the kitchen and fixed her some juice. After getting her quiet, I got us both dressed and got her stroller from out of the closet.

We went outside, the midnight stars wad glistening, it was calm along with a cool temperature. I closed and locked the door, a loud horn can be heard and Leyana begin to cry.

I kneeled down to her and wiped the tears that was forming in her eyes. "Its okay Le-Le, don't cry." I zipped up her coat and pulled out my gameboy and gave it to her, her mood then changes; she doesn't know how to play it but it can take her focus off of the rowdy streets.

I hold on to the handle bars of her stroller and begin to push her; starting our journey. After a twenty minute walk we make it to to Crenshaw BLVD, where crack heads and prostitutes were just standing around.

I looked around for my father but I couldn't seem to place his face. I go down maple street, which is one of the most dangerous streets in the cities, known for robbery and homicide.<sup>2</sup>

I made it in front of the crack house, where a few people was standing outside of drinking, talking and laughing. I bent down and unstrapped my sister out strolled then parked the stroller near a bush.

I held my sister close to my chest and she laid her head on my shoulder, we walked into the house where the amount of people grew. I held my arm over over Leyana's nose she couldn't inhale smoke and toxins.

As we walked by a hooker touched her finger. "Hey lil baby, who yo mama is."<sup>1</sup>

I rushed away from her and fled to the back of the house, and that's when I saw him.

"Hoe you better get yo' trifling ass out there and make my money, you hear me?" My father was pulling the white woman back from her hair as he shouted in her face. She was half dressed with knotty hair.<sup>1</sup>

"Okay Percy!" She whines and flees away from him. As he watches her run off he puffs on his ciggirate. He didn't even notice, I catch him before he turns around to enter the other room.<sup>1</sup>

"Daddy!" I called out. He slowly turns around and pulls the ciggirate out his mouth.

"Zayn?" He gives me a black look as he walks towards me.  
"Boy what the hell you doin here? Where ya mama?"

After two years he still look the same, a brown skinned with man with scars covering his face and piercing in his nose.

"When you comin home?" I ask him.

"Boy, why the hell you got this baby in here? Huh?" He says through gritted teeth.

"Dad I want you to come home....I-I need you." I weep.<sup>2</sup>

He grabs me by my collar and look me dead jn my eyes, he was angry with me. I didn't understand why, I just wanted to see him.

"Why the fuck are you here Zayn?"

I look down at the carpet and begin shed tears. "Dad I just want you to come home. Please.....mama's man keep hurting me."

"Listen boy you need to toughin' up!" He says in my ear. "I cant be there for you right and you know it, so suck it up a'ight."

My tears then pour from eyes harder he wraps his arm around me and kisses my forehead. "Toughin up boy....Daddy can't be here for you right now. Get out of here."2

Three months later my father was found dead in abandoned warehouse that was put on fire. He burned to death. All I wanted to do was be with him.45

Makiela.

The Uber that Zayn had prepared for me was outside of my job, My shift was over an hour ago, I decided to go to a Victoria's Secret and pick up something. I cross the street while on the phone with my mom, then I entered the back of the car.

"For Makiela Randall?" The driver asked as looks at me through the rear view he had a thick intalian accent.



"Hold on mom-- Yeah that's me. Here's the address to my destination." I hand him the piece of paper that I wrote Zayn's address on.

"Alright." He takes is.

"Yeah mom I'm going to go Zayn's." I tell my mom as I put on my seat belt, then I whip my straight hair to the back.

"So that's your man now?" She ask.

"Yeah my little high school sweet heart. We're dating but are still taking things slow, like I don't expose him to Aabria to much, you know like letting him in the house and just letting him linger. Their builing a relationship though he takes us out.We're still kind of in friends mode... cause were not all intimate. But he's sweet he takes me. We're just being slow with it." I explained.4

"I'm glad your happy, he seems very nice and genuine. I'm at

Aabria's practice now and I'm watching her skate." She tells me.

"Yeah...Zayn pays for her lessons. He wants her to live out her dreams....oh my gosh mom...he is perfect."

"You better keep him, mommy is proud to see that your happy. I'll call you later and bring Bri home tomorrow?".1

"Okay mommy see you."

"See you baby."

I lean back in my seat and enjoy the drive on the high way, all the windows were half way open causing the wind to make my hair fly all over the place.

After thirty minutes, we were driving through out a country type of neighborhood that had a lot of land. I was suprised

to see nice size mini houses in their own secluded area.

"Your destination is on the right." The GPS speaks. My eyes widened as we pull up to this big beautiful home, it was surround with palm trees, bushes and flowers. The house was white and olive green colored; the chandlers were shining through the window,

I stared out the window in disbelief that this was Zayn's home. It was to beautiful to match his style.

"Miss your here." The driver reminds me.

"Give a minute this has to be the wrong house." I pull out my phone and go to my call log and click on Zayn's name and wait for him to answer.<sup>3</sup>

"Hello?" He answers.

"Zayn I think I'm in the wrong neighborhood, the driver just pulled up to this house. Can u send me your address again."

I ask.

"Hold on." He says. I then look back out the house and the door opens; he then comes outside.

"You at the right house!" He shouts. My eyes I get big, I grab my purse and exit the car then rush up to him, I look around at the house then at him.

"This is your house."

"Yeah baby." He holds me too close to him and we enter the house, it was beautiful clean white walls, plasma television...spottless floors but it was close to be empty literally one couch was in the center of the living.

"Where is your furnisher Zayn?" I asked concerned. This house was too gorgeous not to be designed with the good stuff.

"I haven't got around to it yet but I got a stylist who's going to be helping me in a few days."

"Really who is she?" I asked.

"You." He kisses my lips and I smile and fold them together.

"Come in here and see what I did for you." He grabs my hand and leads me into the kitchen, that was big and roomy. The smell of food alerted me right away.

"What did you cook?" I smirk. He takes me over to the table where there were two plates covered with platters along with two champagne glasses.<sup>8</sup>

"Zayn what is this?" I whine, he pulls my chair and out and I sit down.

"Something for our two week anniversary." He opens up my

platter revealing a plate of shrimp alfredo sided with garlic bread.12

"This is a lot for two weeks man...shoot." I laugh.

"I know." He places his hand in the middle of his chest "but a nigga want to show you that gentle men still exist and this is how your suppose to be treated....like I queen. I know you never experienced before so here's your chance. Just a little something."

"I love it baby." I poke my lip out.

"Aw shit! My name is baby now. Baby." He says slowly and I giggle. "Lets say grace baby girl." He insist as he holds out his hand, I grab it and we both bow down our heads.16

A man that preys....is a man that stays. Lord....won't he do it.33

"Father God, we come to you in the Lord Jesus name and thank you for blessing my beautiful and lady I with a two week anniversary. Thank you for bringing her in my life, she has been one of bestest friends for these last few months, and thank you for blessing my hands to prepare this meal for us. In Jesus name Amen and Amen."

"Amen." I say, we release each others hands and whip the noodles around my spoon and begin to eat.

"Mmmmm Zay this is soooo good." I moan with my mouth full.

"I know." He says in a cocky way.

After twenty minutes we finish our meals, I look at him and smile.

"I didn't have that much money but I managed to buy you a gift." I tell him.

"Okay."

I pull out the small white plastic bag from my purse and scoots it across the table to him.

"Lets see what you got your baby." He opens it and it's a blue watch that only costed ten dollars.113

"Aww..." He says.17

"I know its cheap but I wanted to get you something." I fiddle with my fingers as I bite on my bottom lip.3

He leans in and kisses my lips. "Girl ima wear this cheap ass watch with so much pride. I love this ma!" He shouts and I cover my mouth and laugh.59

"You do?"

"Yeah, I got something for you stay right here." He goes out of the kitchen and comes back with a plain white envelope,



that an elastic ribbon tied around it. He hands it to me. I look up at him a confusion.

"Is this a gift card or something?" I questioned.

"Open Kiela." He grins.

I rip the evenlope open just to reveal another one that's inside of it. I take it out and glance at him when I see FIDM, my name was on it but it was his address.

I teared it open and started to read the letter.

Dear Makiela, We are honored to accept you

Dear Makiela,

It is with great pleasure that I welcome you and congratulate you on your acceptance to the Fashion Institute of Design and Merchandise. You will have a great four years wi--48

"Ahhh!!!" I screamed from the top of lungs, I didn't even get to the read the rest of the letter I was at a lost for words. "Wha- what is this Zay? H-h-how did this?! Oh my gosh!" I begin to cry.<sup>10</sup>

"Sit down." Zayn tells me.

"Zay-- wh-what is this?"

"I paid for the tuition so you can live out your dreams. I told you that you were gonna make it happen someday."<sup>1</sup>

"You paid for all four years? It's of two-hundred thousand dollars Zayn!" I yell.<sup>29</sup>

"I know baby...I know but you deserve it."<sup>1</sup>

"Zayn why! I can't pay you ba--"<sup>5</sup>

"Kiela I don't want anything in return, I just want you to live out your dreams. Go to school do what you always wanted to do."10

More tears flea from my eyes, I quickly wrap my arms around his neck and hold on tight. "Thank you! Thank you so much!"

"Don't thank me, you deserved it."8

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 11- Sacrifices.

"Ima come check on you later on tonight? Is that okay?" I ask Makiela as I walk away from my car and go into

Bishop's car that was next to mine.

"Yeah baby that's okay....do you want me to stay up and wait?"

"You can go to sleep if you want bae...I'll call you when I'm on my way." I tell her.

I can hear Aabria singing in the background and she ask if she can speak to me. I love that little girl, we lowkey have the best conversations. "He has to go Bri, he'll be here later on you'll see him if your still awake-- alright baby I'll see you when you get here, be safe."1

"Alright I will." I hang up and look at Bishop as he chuckles under his breath and smoke on his blunt.

"So you finally got you a girl huh?" He ask as he passes the blunt to me,we were sitting in the parking lot of Black Bird;

a strip club we was suppose to be meeting some one here.

"Yeah..." I hit the blunt. "I paid for her scholarship with the dough I've been saving up."

"You must love her if you did all that." He says. "I heard that's Jay baby mama....you beefing with that nigga now or what?"

"It ain't no beef on my part...that little nigga know not to fuck with me. But what's the discussion gon' be about when we walk up in here?"

"I'm not too sure, what he gon be talking about he just wants to talk to us." He tells me.

"Alright."

He presses the power button on his phone and glance at the

time, then he scratches the side of his head. "It's about that time to head in there, you ready?" He ask me.

"Yeah man let's roll." We both open our car doors and make our exit out of the vehicle, as were walking we see a few a hoes running their mouth and babbling as they smoke a blunt with these tricks.

Bishop nods at the security guards and they let us in with out any hesitation, we then enter the club that's filled to capacity with strippers, males, females all partying, colorful lights reflect from off of the walls and strippers are dancing to some turnt twerk song, and either is on the pole or giving table dances.

I follow Bishop up the long trail of stairs, I read the sign that we pass that says VIP only. We meet some bouncers as we get to the top of the staircase, they take one look at us and un lock the rope to allow us in.

As were walking someone rudely bumps into me.

"Aye watch where you goin' fam." I say as I look up to see the familiar face of the person that I haven't seen in years, my "step" brother Quentin .

"We gotta problem?" He ask sternly, he clenches his fist together and his goons come away from their table to back him up.

"I don't know do we gotta problem?" Bishop pulls out a gun and place it right between his eyes. His boys than lie low, not even attempting to back him up.<sup>16</sup>

I shift my mouth to the side and shake my head, and use my hand to lower the gun down. "These niggas don't want these type of problems man its cool."

"Fellas what's goin on?" We turn around to see Big Branco behind us with two girls on each side, a long with built body guards. He still look the same from when I was a kid, short

stocky dude, with the same fresh style and jewels.

"Who's starting shit in my buisness?" He questions, as the smoke from his cigar flows to the top of ceiling.

"Lil Q, of course." Bishop states while nodding his head at Q and his crew.

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug



2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🏳️ 🚫 🍀 🏴‍☠️

"Q get out of here and go to the other section." He rubs his chin and stares at the ground at his fresh dress shoes, Q and his boys begins to walk away without any talk back, Q looks back at me giving off a black glare.2

"Sit down nephews." He points to the table encircled by a couch ahead and we do just that. He then takes a seat across from us along with his women. We sit in silence as he text on his phone, he finally stops and look at us.

"I ordered us a few things, you boys drink? Got some champagne and vodka coming up in a minute." He says as he pulls out a perfectly rolled blunt from out of his pocket and lit it. "Got some hoes coming up too, yall like hoes right?"<sup>9</sup>

"Yeah." Bishop speaks for the both of us.

Big Branco looks at me with a goofy smile as he remove the blunt from his mouth. "Zayn man.....I haven't saw your knuckle head ass since you were sixteen years old, you look just like ya daddy boy, I tell ya."

Big Branco is Bishop and I father's younger brother, which makes him our uncle. He's the only one out of four brothers who outlived,survived and also succeeded with King Pin shit. Brian Walton...aka Branco the kin pin known world wide.<sup>1</sup>

"I get that a lot Unc." I chuckle.

"How was prison for you, I heard ya did seven years for what you did."

"Yep I was sentenced for eleven but....the judge decreased the sentence after I did some anger management and shit."

"That's good...you a Walton ain't no cell holding you down."3

A stripper with nothing but a g-string on approaches are table, she had a light warm brown complexion with long straight hair. Her ass and titties was out like no one's buisness. Her big green eyes aims at Bishop and I , then she looks at Branco.

"You wanted me sir?" She questions as she grips the table.

"Yeah Daniela, I wanted you to give my nephews a table dance.... let them touch on you. I'll pay you later.4

Bishop smirks and licks his lip at the sight of her round juicy ass, me on the other hand wasn't phased my dick didn't even jump like it usually would.16

She starts wrapping her arms around my torso and I stop her. "I got a girl." I remove her arms from around me.41

"B this one is all yours."

I sense her salty attitude, I knew that she wanted to tend to me more than Bishop, cause I'm the shit of course but I have a girl now all that shit is a no no.3

"You got a girl?" Branco asked surprised. "In the type of business your in?"

He says as a bartender come and put alcohol bottles and champagne glasses on our table.

"Yeah, she don't trip about the shit I do she's supportive."

"Hm...interesting. I wish I had a supportive woman back in my day....Anyway....." He reaches over and grabs the vodka bottle and begin to open it. "I wanted to talk to the two of you about something very important....this could take the both of you to the next level if you make a name for your self."

I look over at Bishop, who has shawty sitting on his lap and grinding on his dick which caused him to breathe heavily and grab both her ass cheeks.6

"Are you listenin'?" I ask him.

"Yeah....I hear him man." He says in defensive tone.

"Okay what you want us to do Unc?" I turn back to Branco.

"I'm relocating to Miami, I got a new club I built out there and some new workers willing to put in work. But I still need someone to handle my buisness here....Bishop!" He calls out.<sup>6</sup>

"Yes sir?"

"I want you to take over The Pink Panthers on the east side and take care of them girls keep them in check."

"And Zayn....I want you to take take over this place." He says as he sips on his drink. I squint my eyes and shake my head, knowing that I didn't know how to handle a strip club and women.<sup>1</sup>

"I'm not too sure if I can take your offer Big Branc."

"Son....im not asking you or offering it to you. I'm telling you to do it because I need you too."

"But Unc, pimping ain't my thang. I just got out...--"

"Zayn...Zayn..Zayn" He quickly cuts me off. "I'm not asking, I'm telling you. You gon' do this shit and I don't want to hear no why, ands, buts about it. Your the owner of this place and you keep these girls in check."7

The stripper who's on Bishop's lap take a quick glasp at me, for some reason I felt a gleeful mood from her.15

"I got over forty girls who work here, I'm sure that you can increase that...these girls our more than strippers, their prostitutes but sophisticated ones you can handle them their not the garbage that you find on the streets....you book their appointments and make sure they do their job here as well. I believe that you can do it."2



"How much do you think ima be getting paid?" I questioned.

"At least a hundred thousand a month if you work these girls hard enough, you can handle it man. Ease up a little."<sup>2</sup>

I nod my head in understanding, when really I wasn't into it, this is basically pimping and I'm not that type of a guy. But I guess I had no way out according to him.

"This isn't pimping or anything. No type of sex trafficking, they're not gonna be on the streets looking for dudes.....It's guys who come in here and request an appointment with a chick everyday, they each do about five dudes a week...you a get a percentage of what they get."<sup>23</sup>

It's pimping nigga. That's the definition of pimping. I think to myself.<sup>20</sup>

"I understand." I lied.

Hours went by we smoke and drink, our table is now filled

with Branco's friends who are being entertained by half naked women giving them lap dances. I look down at my watch that Makiela gave me and the time is 2am, she's probably up waiting even though I told her not to.8

I grab my phone out of my pocket and click on her contact.

I'm on my way, give me an hour.

Literally with in a minute she texts back before I can even put the phone back into my pocket.

I'm awake and still waiting. Don't worry...😊5

I nudge Bishop in his arm to get his attention, he turns to me.

"Let's dip, my girl waiting for me."

He nods and we both stand up at the same time. "Well get at you later Unc." I say.

"Where y'all goin the party just got started." He says in away that I thought was corny. He was high and I can see it in his red eyes.

"Zay gotta get to his girl."

"She got you pussy whipped huh son?" He chuckles, then runs his hands acrosss her face. "Well...Monday morning is when I leave for my move, Monday night is when y'all start, adios." He shoos us away.

We make it outside to our cars, I pull out a ciggarate and lean on my vehicle and cover the ciggarate with my hand to light it.

"You a'ight?" Bishop ask as he unlocks his car door.

"No...I don't wanna do this shit man. I gotta take care of the trap, keep the niggas in check. Now I gotta be an owner of a strip club, basically a pimp...and keep hoes in check and this

nigga acting like he gon' kill me if I don't do all of the shit. Not to mention I just got with a good girl, I can't be doing all of this extra shit."2

"You don't want to do it because you know she ain't gon be for it?"

"Yeah that's one of the main reasons, I wanna be a good dude for her."

"Dope money paid for that scholarship right, her ass ain't gon mind when the bad money pay for an engagement ring and wedding possibly."

"We ain't even that far into the relationship to start talkin about all of that." I laugh.3

"But still....this girl sound real cool. Stop trying to be perfect Zay...I know that you've been feeling guilty for years and the joint gave you a brand new mind set. But you can't be

scared of the world...and be scared that every mother fucka' you meet is gonna judge you and hop from out your corner. If ol' girl love you like she say you do she gon support the hustle and set her feelings to the side. I know they say felonies get you jobs a supermarkets and Mcdonalds and shit but this is where the real bread is....if you ever get busted by the federal and they ask who be pimpin the hoes and who run the trap blame it on me.....and I'll take the wrap." He says genuinely.<sup>59</sup>

"Stop bitchin man...go see your girl, we'll talk tomorrow." He tells me before hopping in his ride, I watch as he pulls off, then put out my ciggarate.<sup>1</sup>

"Aye nigga!" Someone calls out as Im turning around to my car, I turn around to see Q and his crew. I stuff my hands and my pocket while eyeing each and every one of them.<sup>2</sup>

"Wassup?" I shrug.

"We got a problem to handle." They all charge at me all at

once, they tackle me to the rock hard cement, then begin to stomp me out; while some of them was beating me in the face with their fist, in the midst of this I pull my gun from my waist line, which should've happen first but they snuck me.<sup>2</sup>

I pulled the trigger and heard someone cry out and agony. The whole crew started to scatter a long with other people on the other side of the parking lot. I rush into my car and throw the gun in the glove department, then start the car up and pull off so fast that I cause my tires screech.<sup>1</sup>

I arrive at Makiela's door step banging at the door as if the cops was on my tail when really I just needed to calm down and rest.

"Hold on! Hold on!" I hear her shout. She opens the door and furrow her eyebrows at the sight of my fresh bruises.

"Zayn what happen?!" She ask in a whining tone. I push her to the side and walk in, I sit on her couch and catch my

breath.

"What happen?" She asks once more.

"I got jumped baby." I reply irritated, not at her but just at the situation. She walks out the living room leaving me alone to have a moment of silence.

I unexpectedly feel her presence next to me, I look over at her while she places a bottle of proxide and wet rag on the table along with bandages.

"Take this off." She assist with me taking my jacket off then she positions her self on the couch by getting on her knees, then she reaches over to get the rag and apply peroxide to it, she dabs the cold rag on my fresh scars and lay my head back.

"So who jumped you?"

"My step brother and his boys." I state.

"Why? were you guys drunk or something?"

My eyes closes on its own by the peroxide burning a little.

"Nah...we didn't even get into it. He never really liked me."

"Why not?"

"I don't wanna talk about it baby." I tell her, hoping that she leave it where it's at.

"Where did this all take place."

"The strip club....I didn't go there to see any women. I had a meeting with my boss....you know the king pin of everything."

"Okay Zayn...I believe you."She takes a deep breath, and



starts to place the bandages on my cuts.

"Baby...." I call out

"What?"

"Stop for a minute." I grab her arm stopping her process of healing my scars. "I have to tell you something."

"What babe?"

"I'm being honest because I love you...and I want to be absolutely truthful about everything. So.....I talked to my uncle...the king pin or whatever and um..he's moving to Miami...so he's forcing to take on the responsibility of his strip club I'm the co-owner."2

"You're an owner of a strip club now? Okay Zayn that's okay just don't get caught up with those hoes in there." I tell him.

"That's not what I'm worried about though, my uncle is forcing me to take over the club and be involved with sex trafficking...im not gonna be a pimp on the streets and tellin hoes to run my money...its gonna be much more sophisticated...like the girls have appointments with guys they do sexual favors with them only at the club or hotels but still that's pimping. And i don't wanna do it."

She huffs and shakes her head in total disbelief while looking away from me. "What do you mean he's forcing you? Your grown Zayn you do what you want."

"It's not like that baby.....I can't say no to guys like him or i'm being disrespectful. I told him two times I didn't want to do it but me not being involved wasn't even in for discussion with him. I just wanted to tell you....this is the type of life I live."

She takes a deep breath then folds her full lips together. "Zayn.....I don't like this and I don't agree with it. I really want to tell you to stop the things you do but your a grown

man. I trust you and I know that you won't endanger my daughter and I. I support you even though I hate the fact that your gonna be working in a club with naked hoes....but you go ahead and have your seperate life that you have with the streets but make sure your careful. And just show us the best of you, like you always have."12

I gaze deeply into her eyes and allow my lips to land on her.  
"I love you."

"I love you too....I'll always be here for you baby. Just be careful."15

"I will."

2 Months Later.

Makiela

"Okay students, now it's time to style your full body mannequin with your latest design." My professor Ms. Joplin instructs with a smile. "I want to see the beauty! I want to see the art! I want to see the creativity! Show me that you are the next Michael Kors, Dolce & Gabbana, Coco Chanel...come on people!" She says dramatically in with humor causing all of the students to laugh.

I walk over to my full body mannequin

, Zaybria. She's my baby...I put all of my designs on her. We had to pay almost 200 dollars for these things, it's needed for your styling skills. It helps that they have built bodies like real females along with cute faces and hair. My baby is dark and lovely and I change her lace fronts every week. Next semester we get to use real upcoming models to model in our designs.<sup>12</sup>

I dress my mannequin in my design, that is a stunning spring dress, appropriate for sunny and stormy days along with any type of occasion. It's colored coral pink, it's rather brief, long sleeved and stopping at the feet, the front shows all of the goods, which consists of the cleavage and slit to show off the thighs.

To go along with it is a hat that's big but not too much, its the color of firebrick red, then I top it all off with the firebrick red hills with gold bottoms and buckles. Once I'm all the way finish Ms.Joplin comes over with her hands over her mouth, I was just hoping she gives me a good review.

"Do you like it?" I question, eager to know.

"I love it! It is gorgeous girl!" She shouts, then she examines. "Very impressive Makiela. I bet you stayed up everything making this."

"I say about two weeks straight but I kept messing with it, adding new thing, it use to be strapless.

"I love this , A+. Keep up the good work." She assures to me.

"Yes!" I cheer myself off quietly, class was almost over so I begin to pack my things up, I felt someone starring at me....so I turned around, to see three girls eyeballing me.

For a while I've been having women stare at me in a salty way, I know im sexy and have a fat ass but after awhile the shit gets annoying. I don't get their problem.9

Class finally dismisses, as I'm walking the same people is staring at me. I ignore them and after five minutes I make it to my vehicle . I managed to get me a car, a 2014 Mercedes-Benz, it's a blessing that I have good credit cause that's how I got such a nice a vehicle. It's not a 2016 but it's a car so I don't care.

"You know that's Zayn girl right?" I hear a coversation takes place and it's about me, I didn't turn around because I didn't want them to think that they grasped my attention I just begin to load my car with my things.

"You for real? She cute and all but I don't see what he see in her. I thought nigga was gay for a minute cause I went in his office and offered to suck his dick or what ever but he was acted nuts. I got her in a few of my classes....she seem a little uppity though. He must like them boogi hoes."9

"That nigga is too fine to be with her lowkey." The other one adds with a giggle.

I nod my head and close the back door, then I slowly walk over to the the two females as their having a conversation, they didn't even seem to notice me walking up to them because they changed the subject so quick.

"Hello." I greet them with a smile, throwing them off guard.

"Hey..." The one the right says in awkward tone.

"I heard you guys having a discussion about me and I thought I come and introduce myself I am Makiela, Zayn's girl...you know the one he sleeps in the bed with and kiss and shit yeah that's me. I wasn't gonna come over here but you called me a hoe.....um you must be the biggest hoe I have ever laid eyes on cause your begging my man for his dick....only hoes do that." I say to the one on the right then I

turn to the on the left.12

"And you say he's too fine to be with me....maybe your just too ugly for him to be with someone your type." I state. "You two have a good day, and if you ain't gon ask me for my number stop staring at my ass while were in class...its disrespectful."30

"Bitch what?! I will whoop your ass!" The girl on the right says.

"Daniela chill....this is Zayn's girl. You don't wanna get fired over this mess."6

"Come correct when you speak about me ma." I walk away and go into my car. I didn't want to be so messy but these hoes really be trying to test me, I know a lot of the girls from his club goes to school here, I even have one who works at my new job. It's hard being Zayn's girl, all this jealousy.10



\*\*\*\*

I walk into the house and Aabria is at home which is unexpected because I dropped her off to my mother's this morning.

"Why are you home? Did she let you stay here by your self?"  
I panic.

"No, she's been with me." Zayn come from out the back.  
"Your mom got called into work so she asked me to come pick her up, I didn't w."

"I was bouta say...." I chuckle. "Hey baby." I bend down and kiss Aabria's forehead.

"Hey mommy, me and Zayn went to lhop earlier he bought me a big breakfast!"

"Zayn always spoiling you." I walk up to him and kiss his lips, then set my things on the table and start to smell an electrical smell.<sup>2</sup>

"Why does it smell like that in here?"

"What?" Zayn asked.

"Do you have the stove on or something, it smells electrical." I tell him<sup>19</sup>

"Nah." He sniffs. "I don't smell nothin but how was your day?"

"Fine. But I had to check your little ho--...I mean girls." I correct myself since Aabra is in the room.

"What girls?"

"From your work place."

"They always staring at me and just talking about how im your girl and they all want you. I got tired of it and snapped on two of them. It's about ten of them that goes to FIDM, that's crazy." I sit down and rub head, since I was starting to get an headache.

"You better stop being messy..you are there to learn and succeed. Don't listen to what any of those hoe-- girls gotta. And I mean that, I don't want you to be in any drama."

"Your right...I'll just ignore them. I'm so tired I gotta go to sleep early for work tomorrow."

"What you want for dinner tonight?" He ask me.

"You gon' cook?"

"What do you want."

"Tacos...fajitas....Mexican food." I yawn as I rub my neck.

"Alright im about to go to the store."

Aabria jumps up and smiles. "Can I come too Zayn?"

"Yeah Bri Bri get your shoes on."

"Yay!"

After minutes they get their selves together and leave, my head and chest starts to hurt. So I get up and go to myroom to get some rest.12

Zayn

"Somebody come get her! She's dancing like a stripper!"

Aabria sings along with the radio, I change the station to old school r&b and turn back to her,13

"Ain't nobody dancing like a stripper over here." I tell her.20

"I like that song." She folds her arms and pokes out her lips.

"No you don't." I chuckle to myself.2

"Zayn, can I help you cook the tacos?"

"Umm you can help me bake the cookies I got for you and mommy. How was practice earlier?"

"Good I can spin really good now, can you come to my practice tomorrow and watch me?" She ask.

"Yeah baby girl I'll come."

"Yes!" She cheers to her self.

We pull up to Makiela's apartment complex and it's surprisingly in flames.<sup>24</sup>

"Oh!!! What happen! It's a fire! Fire! Fire!" Aabria exclaims and begin to cry.<sup>4</sup>

I rush to park the car then take off my seat belt. "Bri stay in here until I find mommy out here."

I get out and look at all the faces and see no Makiela.

"Makiela!" I call out her names a few times and that's when I had it in mind that she was still in the building.

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 13- Talking to Dad.

Makiela.

I hold my legs together as I rock back and forth feeling myself get very horny for some reason, I have never felt so anxious to have sex before. I looked over at Zayn as he was asleep, his hard rod was bulging out of his boxers, making me go insane in my head.14

I've been so stressed out lately and Zayn and I only had sex three times....our relationship is truly build off of love and heart but we gotta attach sex to it too. Because his dick is too bomb not too.24

I quietly get out of the bed and take off my pajama shorts along with my bra and panties. I am so naughty and

ridiculous. This is so disrespectful. Why am I about to do this. I think to myself. I get back on the bed and slide his boxers off slowly enough for me to pull his hard member out, I take it out from its hiding place.<sup>44</sup>

Then I climb on top of him and slide myself on to his rod.

"Ooooo...." I moan as I take every inch inside of me. I begin to bounce my ass up and down on his dick, I tilt my head back and open my mouth, it felt so good...I wanted to ride harder but I didnt want to wake him, even though I'm sure what I'm doing would wake him up. I grind on him and another moan escapes from my lips while I'm staring at the ceiling.<sup>41</sup>

Surprisingly he grips my ass hard, causing me to stop and look at him in embarrassment, I knew he would wake up but not catching me off guard like this.

"What you doin?" He asked.

"Hm?" I ask softly



"Are you raping me?" He squints. "You just gon take the dick..."125

"I'm sorry." I start to climb off, but he holds on to my ass and roughly pound my pussy on to his big hard dick, and I begin to scream out of pleasure.

"Oh shit! Mmm...yes! Ooooo daddy!"

"You just gonna take my dick?" He laughs and continue the process, I yell from the sex that I am receiving and he stops and remove me from off of him and pin me down on my stomach as he hovers over me.

"Pu--" Before he can give me instructions I arch my back and position my ass in the air.

"Oooo....you know what daddy like." He runs his finger from the top of my ass crack all the way dow to my clit, and I get chills from the touch.15

"Zay please fuck me, i need it." I beg.

He grabs my hips and slowly starts to grind in side of me, I hiss and play with my nipple as he bends over and kisses my neck.

"You want it harder baby?" He questions.

"Yeeess."

"Tell daddy how you want it." He voices in his deep husky tone, my core begins to flow.

"I-I want it rough.....and I want you to go fast".

He then thrust his self into me hard, while squeezing my ass. "You mean hard like this?"

"Yes!" I cry out.

He hasten his pace and I squeal loud, causing my voice to

echo through out the whole room.

"Shiiit! Oh fuck, Zayn!" I grip on to the sheets and arch my back even more.

He slaps my ass hard causing to me yell out of agony and pleasure.

"You like this don't you?"

"Yes daddy! Harder!"

He slaps my ass a few more times causing it to sting.

"Throw it back." He demands as he slaps it again.

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🍆 🍌 🍀

I throw my ass back as I look behind me and watch as his whole shaft quicky strokes inside of my pussy, I can feel him growing inside of me, I pound myself on to him hard. And he licks his lips as he watches ass my ass jiggle all

over his dick.

"Damn girl....this pussy is somethin else." He chuckles and wipe the sweat forming on his forehead, he stops and lays me on my back, then spread my legs wide apart, leaving them in the air.

He enters his manhood in my entrance, and harshly ram his self into me, he's tearing this pussy up. It's so wet that it starts to make a loud slouching noise, he goes deeper and I wrap my legs around his waist and dig my nails into his back.<sup>14</sup>

"You love me?" He whispers in my ear.<sup>2</sup>

"Yes daddy I-I love you so much!" My voice cracks.

"Who own this pussy?" He pounds harder and quicker, and I feel myself about to cum.<sup>2</sup>

"I don't wanna cum yet Zayn, slow down!" I beg with tears

running down my cheeks.

He ignores my plea, and wraps his hand around my neck.  
"Who own this pussy? Tell me." He says sternly.16

"It's yours daddy! You own it! Oh shit I'ma-- ima cum!"

He goes faster, we release together, I can feel his warm nut filling up inside of me.57

"Why you do that I wasnt ready and you didn't even pull out!"  
I whined.

"I want you to have my baby, that's why." He kisses my lips and get off of me. I lay down trying to restore my self.32

"Zayn.....you get on my nerves." I say with a smile.1

He goes into the bathroom and closes the door behind. And I start having flashbacks of what we did already, he knows how to wear me out. His phone begins to vibrate. I pick it up

and look at the message that pops up on the screen.

Diamond- Hey, are you up? I need you for something.

I lick on my lips and squint my eyes. I then tried to get access into his phone and I needed a code which was odd, because we made a thumb print for each others phones when we first got together.

"Baby?" I call out as he exits the bathroom and grabs a towel.

"Yeah."

"Who is Diamond?" I questioned.

"Oh this girl that I met outside the club a few days ago, she's a sixteen year old runaway, I've been helping her get her life together." He tells me.



"Well why haven't you introduce us, I would like to meet her."

"Okay baby, maybe sometime tomorrow. I'm suppose to drop her off at school."

"Oh okay." I smile, and get up and grab my robe from the off the hook we have near the closet and I wrap it around my self.

"Why did you put a lock on your phone?" I ask as I tie the robe.

He pokes out his lip and glances at me. "I just felt like it."

"Oh okay, ima put one on my mi--"20

"The code is your name." He cuts me off and hold a goofy

smile on his face. "I just wanted to test out my settings and I'm not creeping on you. Diamond is a little girl that I'm helping out, I'm tryna keep her out of the streets....cause she wanted to work at the club."6

"Okay I believe you Zayn, don't worry." I giggle and go into the bathroom.2

\*\*\*\*

"Go Bri Bri!" I cheer my baby on as her and her friends have an skating contest during practice. I aim my phone at them, recording them on Facebook live.2

"My baby is cold on the skates....Hey Ty and Tammi!" I switch the camera to me and smile as I read my facebook friends comments.

Keitra David: That baby is talented.

"Thank you cousin!" I say to the camera.

I switch the camera back on Bri and smile as she flys away on her skates, she was amazing. Not once have I ever seen her fall it'd magical.

"Damn she moves fast." I turn around to see Jay, I turn off live and put my phone in my pocket.<sup>24</sup>

"I see you came." I raise my eyebrow.

"I told you I wanted to see her."

He leans on the rail and watches as she skates, he seem concentrated on her. He called me yesterday and said that he wanted to see her, I told him I would never keep him away from his child he just has to do right by her and can't break her heart.<sup>2</sup>

"Are you feeling better?" He ask.

"Yeah...I've been okay. Thanks for asking so where did you want to take her again."

"I gotta handle some stuff for your man at three, so I'll take y'all out to lunch and just talk to her." He says as he scratches the left side of his head.

"Oh okay." I nod. My phone then begins to ring I look at the caller ID and it says

My King👑🗣️

"Hello?" I answer my phone.

"Hey baby...where you at?" He questions.

"I am still at practice with Bri, I'm gonna let her spend time with Jay. Did you want something?" I stroke my hair.

"Yeah...im at the club right now doing auditions cause you know i fired some of the girls can you bring me something to eat in the next few hours."

"Yeah baby I can do that, and I paid our phone bills today with my check, so you don't have to worry about it."

"I told you don't lay a finger on my bills girl, why don't you listen." He chuckles. "I gotta go though I'll see you in a minute. I love you."

"I love you more." I hang up the phone and corner my eyes once I see Jayson starring at me, I ignore his stare and look ahead at Aabria as she skates away.

"Why do you have him in y'all lives if you know the type of shit he do. That nigga sell dope, and he a pimp. You want that around your daughter."34

"Jay I told you before he knows how to keep his streer life seperate from his family life....if you want to have this little date with your daughter, please don't be petty"

"Alright girls that's it for today." Aabria's coach screams out to the young girls. Young girls begin skating to thier parents, Aabria grabs her bag from her cubby and starts to glide her a self over, she looks at Jayson giving him a salty look, and she glances back at me.

"You did so good baby girl." I tell her as we walk over to the bench and she sits down, I start insist her with taking off her skates.

"Thanks mommy." She says with a soft tone.

"Are you gonna say hi to your daddy." I ask her.1

"Zayn is my daddy not him." She frowns and I get her regular gym shoes from out of her bag along with her

jacket.91

"No I'm your daddy Bri." He tells her as he sit besides. But she just doesn't by it, she stands up and I hand her her sweater so she can put it on.2

"No....my daddy is Zayn. Mommies boyfriend...."

"Come on y'all let's go." Aabria has been calling Zayn her father for the last week, At some point I wanted to stop her and tell her not to, but I'm not gonna steal that title away from both her and Zayn. Because they have a fatherly and daughter bond.20

Zayn spoils her, and they have small little dates on the weekend. He reads her bedtime stories, help her with her homework and he watches her most of the time when I'm at work.

When we first got together, I didn't want him around Aabria

and be with her alone until I knew that I could fully trust him, now that I trust him and she does as well, I allowed him to step in and be her father figure.

"So you want to ride with us?" I ask as I walk to Mercedes-Benz and use the remote to unlock the doors, Aabria gets in the back seat and starts to strap her self in.

"Yeah...i took the bus here." He shoves his hands into his pocket, and walk to the passenger side to hop in, I go in as well and place my purse in the back seat, he watches me as I throw my curly hair in to a messy bun.<sup>3</sup>

"Where do you wanna eat at?" He turns to ask Bria but she doesn't respond.

"Bri Bri where you wanna eat at?" I ask her.

"Jack In The Box." She responds, referring to a fast food chain in South Central.<sup>34</sup>



"Alright."

I pull off and turn on the radio, I enjoy the Los Angeles weather. I was happy that Zayn moved us up here in the upscale part of the city, because truly I was tired of living in the hood, Aabria couldn't even make friends because I wouldn't allow her to hang out with these bad ass kids.

I watch as Jayson tense up, I could tell that he was nervous about something.

Jayson14

I hold the door open for Makiela and Aabria letting them go in first. My little girl haven't talked or even looked at me the whole ride here, we were first in line already so a waiter quickly seated us into a booth.6

"You wanna sit by your daddy?" Makiela ask her.

"No." She says with a smile and sit next to her mother. My daughter is beautiful, she got her dark complexion from her mother, but she inherited my hazel brown eyes, that change colors between the seasons, right now they were a a darker hazel brown like mine, her nose and lips match mine as well. She has medium length hair that Kiela keeps up in natural curls.<sup>10</sup>

"Can I offer you guys anything to drink?" Our waiter ask. I allow Makiela to order what she wanted first.<sup>2</sup>

"I'll have a strawberry lemonade and my daughter will have the same and we'll like to order a meal now if that's okay." She says.

"Okay and for you sir?" He turns to me.

"Um just bring me an orange juice, what would have to eat."

"You want the same thing mommy want?" She asks Aabria

and Bri nods her head with a smile.

"Her and I will both have pancakes along with turkey sausage and eggs with melted cheese and green peppers."2

"That sounds good mommy." Aabria smiles.

"And for you sir?" He ask.

"Just bring me the same thing they have."

"Alright." He writes down our order in his pad. "I'll be back with your drinks in a minute ."

Makiela pulls out her phone and furrow her eyebrows, I guess she seen something disturbing, she looks st me. "Ima go outside I have to call Tysis. I'll be back." She gestures for Aabria to get up so she can go outside, once she leaves the table Aabria stares down at the table.

After five minutes I decided to do something to change her mood. "Boop." I tap her nose with my finger and she slightly smiles.

"Your pretty." I tell her.

"Thank you." She says softly.

"So I seen you skating, you know your Auntie Jasmin use to skate, but she slipped on a banana and broke her leg so she doesn't do it anymore."25

She starts to laugh and she covers up her mouth. "You can't slip on a banana, my mom says thats a myth."

"Oooo look at you, your pretty intelligent for your age to a big word like that."

"My daddy Zayn taught me what intelligent meant."

Anger then boils inside of me, but I hid. I didn't like that Makiela had her calling some other man Daddy.<sup>27</sup>

"You wanna know something about your daddy?" I ask.<sup>1</sup>

"What? You know my daddy Zayn too?" She tilts her head.

"Yeah I work with him. You know he does bad things, like sell drugs and do them."<sup>102</sup>

"No he doesn't....he tells me that drugs are bad all the time."

"But he does do it....you know what else do? He hits women,one day a girl didn't give him his money so he choked her and gave her a black eye, he's gonna hit your mommy like that one day."<sup>46</sup>

"No...he loves mommy. He pulled mommy out a our house that was on fire....he almost got burnt up too."

"He set that fire up.....to hurt mommy. I know..."13

"Uh uh...Zayn loves me and mommy." She knits her eyebrows together.

"ok...ok...just remember that he's a bad man...he hits women and he even killed his old girl friend and best friend....I don't want him to kill your mommy."29

She looks at me with fear in her eyes and that's when Makiela comes back and sits back down.

"What was yall talking about?" She questions as she strokes Bria's hair, Bria keep her eyes on me and then she looks at her mother.

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 14-Bad Days.

Zayn

"We have some one we want you to see Ms.Warrior, he's the one who bought you the home?" I hear the Ms.Johnson say to my mother as I stand out of her apartment in the hall.

"Who?" My mother ask in gleeful tone.

Ms.Johnson getures for to come in and my mother holds a stale expression on her face, showing that she wasn't pleased with her surprise.

Ms.Johnson rubs my back and grins at my mom. "Okay

Ms.Warrior, I'm gonna get on out of here and let you and your son have some privacy."

"Thank you Ms.Johnson." I nod my head at her as she walks out. I close the door and my mother sits on her couch, and use the remote control to turn on the power on the television.

I turn it off and sit next to her. "Ma, your gonna talk to me today, I don't care what you say or do."

She shakes her head from side to side as she rises and sit in the chair in front of me. Her salty attitude was irritating me, because regardless of what I did in the past I am still her son and people make mistakes, she has to realize that.

"Mom I got you your own place because I know you were miserable sitting in that group home and the one thing you can do is say hello to me to show your appreciation." I say in a soft demanding tone.<sup>5</sup>



She sits back in the chair and roll her eyes. She was just too stubborn and cold hearted to say anything to me.

"I had a few gifts for you, but since you want to act all stuck up your not gonna get it. I buy you an apartment and pay your rent and your bills....shit I should've let you stayed in the group home cooped up in the small ass room if I knew you were gonna act this."

"What the fuck do you want from me?" She ask sternly.<sup>3</sup>

"I want your motherly love, something I missed out on for twenty six years." I fold my arms and give her a black glare.

"Your not a baby anymore Zayn....why are you here, I thought the last time I made it clear that I didn't want to be bothered with you."

I yawn as I bow my head up and down. "You did, but you know me I'm hard headed."

"You only bought this apartment so you could black mail me and that's not right." She say while leaning over to her coffee table, she grabs her ciggarate along with the lighter and lights it.

"No I only bought you this apartment because I love you and didn't want you to spend the rest of your life in a group home. Your not appreciating what I have done for you and that's not right, if you fail to appreciate it I can call Ms.Johnson and just have her put you back in your own room." I challenge her.

She scratches her nose with her thumbnail and dump her ashes in the ash tray. "You want me to say thank you?" She smiles in a sarcastic manner.

"That would be nice Angelique."1

"Thank you for being the reason I got put in the group home

in the first place....thank you for getting me out of there since it was all of your fault any way."

"Can I ask you a question?"

"What boy?" She rolls her eyes.

"Do Leyana still come and talk to you, like she use to?"<sup>4</sup>

Her eyes begin to water and she sucks on her bottom lip.

"No....I take meds so I stopped hallucinating so much. All I have is memories."<sup>1</sup>

"Ma, why did you let Shane molest me?" I ask with tears forming in my eyes. She doesn't respond, instead she just stares at the ground and puff on her ciggarate.<sup>5</sup>

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔪 🧨 ♂

"I was molested by a man half of my life mom...for five years. Why'd you let him do it?" My hand trembles.

I watch as she folds her lips together and the tears starts to run down her cheeks, she puts her head in the palm of her hands.<sup>5</sup>

"Get out Zayn." She cries.

"No, why did you let him do that to me. That nigga turned out your son and you didn't do anything about it ma! He took my whole entire manhood away from me, Your the reason why I didn't have my first girl friend until now....because you were the first woman to break my heart."<sup>31</sup>

She lifts her head and slighty smiles. "You got a girlfriend? Y-your not gay?" She seem to ask with joy in her tone.<sup>61</sup>

"Nah...just because that nigga-- did that nasty shit to me doesn't mean I was gonna run to a nigga and start liking that....I wasn't gonna run to same shit that hurt me. Me becoming gay wouldve put a smile on his face, because he would've known that he has that much effect on me...but he doesn't. I got me a woman....and I don't let that shit hold me

down." I lean back and shake my head.

"You can't blame me for that Zayn." She sniffles.15

"I can't? I came to you numerous of times and told you that I was being touched and you ignored it." I begin to shed tears. "You and pops both neglected me...you know how that made me feel?! Alone! Unimportant, not worth shit! The only person who ever loved me back then was my baby sister, and to think everything that happen to her couldve been prevented if you had kicked him out when you found out he was touching me!"

She stands up and jumps in my face. "Don't flip this shit back on me! Don't you dare do it! You are responsible for your own actions!"

"You know what mom I'm not even gonna argue with you because you know your wrong." I rise up and go into my pocket and throw a stack of money on her table.4

"Take care of your self." I walk out.1

After exiting the building I make it to

my vehicle , I can feel my heart easing up with its pace as I open the door. I hop in and before I start the engine, I feel the need to cry but I take a deep breath and hold the tears back.2

I then start the car and pull out of the parking lot of her apartment complex. After twenty minutes of cruising the LA streets my phone begin to ring.

I retrieve it from my pocket and see a unknown number.

"Hello?" I answer.

"M-m-man you need to come down here now." I hear a male say, I can tell that he was nervous.2



"Who is this, where am I coming to?" I ask as I turn the corner.

"It's Jayson man, you need to get down here man..hurry up."3

I sigh and nod my head. "Alright man, what happen?"

"Lil Mikey is dead man, he's gone."21

I hang up the phone and make a rushed U-turn causing my tires to screech.4

\*\*\*\*

Bishop, Jay and I stand over Lil Mikey's body the sight of seeing him lay in a puddle of his own blood made my skin cringe. He was laid out in the middle of the floor, beaten badly and three bullet wounds to the chest.

"Who killed my brother man!" Bishop begins to tears up, he punches a hole into the wall and starts going insane, yelling along with throwing objects everywhere.<sup>18</sup>

I grab him and pull him into a hug, he buries his face in my shoulder as he sobs, and it starts to get me emotional.

"They killed my baby brother man, they got to him."

"It's gonna be a'ight fam...just--just chill." I say trying to comfort him the best way I can, I turn to Jayson who's glaring down at Lil Mikey's body.

"What happen?"<sup>2</sup>

"Man I don't know....I came in and just saw him stretched out. I think those niggas he had beef with on he east side did this."

"What niggas from the east side?!" Bishop pulls away and clenches his fist as he walks towards Jay,

"I-I-I-I don't-- I don't know who they are man, I only heard him talk about 'em."28

Bishop tears pour even more as he stares down at his young brothers' lifeless body, he scrunch up his face and shakes his head. I go over to the couch and grab a blanket, then come back over and cover up my little cousins body.

"What ima tell my mama fam? What ima tell her?" Bishop pulls the blunt from behind his ear and storm out of the house.

I lift my head from the ground and look up at Jayson. "Call a funeral home or something we don't want the cops involved."

I go outside to my cousin and he's sitting on the porch

looking up at that sky. I got to have his back and show him company, because when my close ones died on me he was the first one to be by my side.

"Jay callin the funeral home now." I tell him.

"I was thinking about sending him back home to mama, the the other day he told me he wasn't cut out for this street shit." He puffs on his blunt, and exhale the smoke. "I was gonna let my little bro go home.....I'm out to get who ever did this shit."

"And I am too man."

He stands up and throws the blunt on he ground, putting it out with the tip of his shoe.1

"Where you about to go?"

"Bouta go to the crib and call my mama tell her what I just saw." He sniffles.

"I can do it, if it's to--"

"No I got it." He interupts.

"You sure fam?" I asked worried.

"I got it, I got it." He walks towards his vehicle, and I watches as he hops in and pulls off.

\*\*\*\*

I walk into my home the seasoning smell in the lingering told me that Makiela was in the kitchen cooking. Aabria was sitting on the couch watching cartoons as always, I walked over to her and gave her a kiss on the forehead.

"Hey baby girl."

She wipes it off and frowns at me before I could react  
Makiela comes in the living room with a apron on and her  
hair tied up in high ponytail.

"Hey baby, how was your day?" She ask, as she comes over  
to me and give me a hug along with a peck on the lips.

"Lil Mikey died." I tell her, she lets me go and her face  
turned into a sad frown.

"Are you serious?"

"Yep...Jay called me and I rushed there, someone came into  
the trap and shot him up I guess." I take off my jacket and  
throw it on the couch.

"Come here." She caresses my cheeks and lays my head on  
her shoulder. "I am so sorry to hear that baby" She pulls me  
into a hug and give me a sadden look.

"I'm alright, just a little worried about Bishop." I sit next to Aabria and wrap my arm around her as she watches the television.

"Baby maybe you need to go upstairs and get some rest, I know your tired." Makiela insist.

"Nah...I just want to spend time with my girls to keep my mind off of the stress. What did you make for dinner?"

"I'm making home made lasagna and garlic bread." She says in a low tone.

"That sounds good." I say, I then her footsteps as she walks back into the kitchen. I rub Aabria's head full of hair that was hanging freely and she looks up at me.

She hasn't said much to me for the last few days, which is weird, cause everyday she talks my ear off. Daddy

this....Daddy that.

It felt good to have a child titled me as thier father. A week ago Keila and I had sex, and I didn't pull out, hoping to impregnate. I kind of wish she doesn't end up pregnant, because we don't need to bring a child in the world right now, it's too much shady shit going on around me, I have to figure that out first to make sure my family isn't in harms way.<sup>3</sup>

"What's wrong baby? Why you not talking to me today?" I questioned as I poke out my bottom lip.

"I don't want to." She snaps and move to the other couch, I force myself to grin at her behavior then I kick off my shoes and lay on the couch and try to get some sleep.<sup>3</sup>

After a few hours I wake up to hearing shuffling noises in the kitchen, the house was almost pitch black.I yawn and rise up from out of my spot, then I go into the kitchen to see Makiela leaning back on the counter, texting on her phone



as she ate a chocolate chip cookie.

"Damn baby, why you ain't wake up when the food was done, you know I haven't ate all day." I say as I stretch my arms out wide releasing the tension from my bones.

"I'm sorry baby you were sleeping, I didn't want to wake you cause I know you've been tired. Your food is wrapped up in the microwave.

"Thank you baby."

"What's been wrong with Bri for the last couple of days she's not talking to me." I tell her.

"She's not? I don't know...did you do somethin to upset her, you know she start acting funny when she can't get her way." She says as she sits down at the bar table.

"Nah....I'm worried about her. She's never this quiet."

"I'll talk to her in the morning, Zayn can I ask you something?"

"Wassup?" I ask while getting my plate out of the microwave.

"What happen to your family? Where is your sister that you have a thousand pictures of." She giggles.

"Um I went to go see my mom today, we don't get a long, my dad died when I was like ten or eleven, I got other brothers and sisters on his side but we don't know each other like that and Leyana is....." I pause for a second, "Leyana is gone too."

"When did she go?" She ask me.

"When she was eight. I don't really wanna get all into it though baby."

"Okay, but you know that anytime you want to be an open book I don't mind reading, I'm here for you....I know you have a lot to talk about, your just not ready. I'll listen when you are."3

"Thank you beautiful. Why you up so late, you got work in the morning."

"I was waiting for you to get up, so we can sleep together. You know its hard to fall asleep without you."

I chuckle, then my phone begins to ring. I roll my eyes as I look at the caller identification, it's Diamond. What could she possibly want at twelve - in- the -morning.

"Wassup?" I answer.

"Zayn I need you! He's trying to kill me!"

"Bitch open this door!" I hear someone grunt, along with loud banging.

"What's going on Diamond, where are you?"

"I'm on Maple o-on this-- at this trap-- I need you, this man is trying to hurt me!" She cries.<sup>6</sup>

"Alright I'll be there just stay calm and turn on your location." I instruct her.

"O-o-okay!" She sniffles.

I start heading out the kitchen in a swift movement and Makiela follows me.

"Babe where are you goin?" She shouts a little.

"I gotta go help Diamond, shes in some hood about to get her ass beat or something." I say while putting on my shoes.8

"Zayn be careful, you barely know this little girl she can put your life in danger."

"I'll be fine baby, I'll be right back okay. I promise." I say as I rush out the door.

\*\*\*\*

I follow the instructions that the gps is giving me, I tracked Diamond phone so I know what house she is in, because it tells me exactly she's at.3

I pull up to the curb of a few houses away from the actual house and shut off my engine. I pop open the glove department and put my gun on my waistline, then I exit my

vehicle.

I enter the loud house, where people was partying, smoking weed, snorting crack or just standing around.

"Hey baby can I show you a good time." A latino girl invades my space as she rubs all over my chest, I push her out the way and continue walking through out the house.

I was surprise to see every race here, it was like three different parties. Men in drag were even walking around, what did Diamond get her self into?

The location guides me upstairs, I rush up there and almost all the rooms were filled with folks, people were having their own little parties, while others were just having sex.

My phone begins to beep as I reach a certain door, I can hear Diamond yelling, 'please get off me'. I kick open the door and see a grown ass black man on top of her.

"Zayn!" She cries.

I pull out my pistol and aim it him. "Get off of her now."

He ignores my demand, and begin choking Diamond. I guess to test me, I pull the trigger shooting him in arm twice, he groans and roll over to the other side.

"Come on let's go." I insist her up and she straightens out her clothes. She follows me out of the room and we make it out side to my vehicle.

"Thank you for saving me Zayn." She says as she hops in, I get in as well and start the engine.<sup>7</sup>

"No....what happen to you going to school and getting your life together. Why aren't you staying in the home me and the social worker help put you in? Why is your little ass still on the streets?" I ask as I pull off.

"I'm not good at school so I dropped out again,I don't like

that house and I need money....that's why im on the streets. Shit!" She sulks in her chair and folds her arms.19

For that response I didn't have anything to say to her until we made it to our destination. We pull in to the Beverly Hills Marriott Hotel, it's expensive but I want her to have somewhere nice to stay.2

"Zayn are we sleeping here?" She ask surprised.47

"We're not sleeping here you are."

After paying for the room and getting the keys from the hotel manager, we make it into her a suite, it was just right for her. Everything was in one spot, the room comes with a queen sized bed, a small dining room table, a couch, televison/wifi , bathroom, closet and a office area with a laptop. It's like a nice miniature apartment.

"Ooo this is so nice, I never been in a suite before." She says



sitting on the bed, testing it out.

"Well get use to it, cause this is where your going to be staying for a while. If you want me to help you, you have to meet me half way. Stop dropping out of school, actually try to graduate. That's something I didn't get to do, t

because I was in prison my graduation year. Leave the weed alone, your a child you don't need to be doing that shit, get your self together. All I'm asking you to do is go to school and get a small job, and I can help you out and give you money every now and then. But you have to learn responsibly, you understand?"

"Yes I understand." She gets off the bed and hold both of my hands and plants a soft kiss on my cheek. "Thank you for helping me."44

Makiela

Ms.Joplin dismiss us so I exit out of the class room, today

all we did was mostly sew and draw new designs, I am in love with this school and sometimes I can't believe that I am a student here, Zayn really helped a dream turn into reality.

I make it outside to my vehicle but before I could unlock my car door, I was stopped.

"Hello are you Makiela Randall?" A young white woman ask me, she has a warm beige skin tone, with green colored eyes and dirty blonde hair that seem to be high lighted.

"Yes that's me, may I help you?"

"Yeah I'm Alicia Chènin, the daughter of Antoinè Chènin."

"Oh! I heard of your father, he he's very talented in styling." I smile. "It's very nice to meet you Alicia , your a student here?"

"Use to be, I didn't want to take on fashion like my father. I study physiologically now."

"Well good for you! That's a nice profession as well, what can I do for you?"

"Well I am great friends with Mr.Dubois one of the teachers here, he mentioned to me that your one of his favorite students and your a great designer along with stylist, he even showed me a few of your designs and I like what I see, I'm getting married in April of next year and I need a designer to create a theme and the colors for my wedding and design my wedding dress a long with my bride maids dresses and the suits for the grooms.. I thought it would be a good idea to find someone who attends this school and is not really know in fashion world." She places her hands in the middle of her chest. "I love to see unique designs, I'd rather give someone a chance who's unknown and new, instead of calling Michael Kors or someone."7

"Well I'd be honored to be apart of your wedding, I would love to be your designer. You want me to do your dress as

well?" I ask in a gleeful.

"Yeah if it's not a problem." She smiles as she puts a portion of her hair behind her ear.

"I would love to do it Ms.Chènin, thank you so much for the opportunity." I say heart-felt.

"Your welcome." She gives me a warm hug and I grin at her politeness. "Is there a way I can contact you, because I want to get started right away. I need my girls and guys sized."

"I got you, you have your phone on you?" I ask.

"Yeah."

She gives me her phone and I lock my number in and hand it back to her.

"I will definitely be calling you Ms.Randall."

"Yeah and I will be waiting, we can do the sizing and weighing and stuff at my place sometimes, I have my own office there."

"Okay, it was a pleasure meeting with you and I cannot wait to see your skill."

"Alright I'm going to start drawing on it tonight."

"Okay nice meeting you." She walks away and disappears back into the school and suddenly a milk shake is thrown at my car, I turn to see Daniela with a devious smirk on her face.

"Oh girl I'm sorry, I was trying to get it to the trash." She points to the trash can, 29.6 feet away from my car.<sup>11</sup>

"Oh your sorry? Guess what? Your fired too bitch, so start filling in those McDonald's applications." I open the back seat to my car and grab the windex and a towel I always keep on stand by.14

"If you want me to reconsider, clean it up."

She huffs and starts cleaning. This bitch is childish.13

\*\*\*\*

I walk into the house and it's super quiet, it's never like this. I walk through the house and go over to the family room and over hear Aabria and Zayn talking.

"He said you were trying to hurt me and mommy daddy, I don't want you to hurt us we love you." Aabria cries.

"I would never hurt you baby girl, I love you too. You and

mommy is my only family, stop crying cause your making my heart hurt." He tells her.<sup>3</sup>

"Well do you do drugs?" She sniffles.

"No...but I do sell them because....that's how I take care of you. I'm sorry."

"Its okay, he said you kill people, you don't do that do you Daddy?"

"No...I hurt people when they try to hurt me and my family though. Its called protecting and defending. You know I love you and will never try to hurt you right?"

"Yeah I know." She wipes her eyes. He kisses her cheek and I walk in."

"Mommy!" She cheers and jumps into my arms.

"Hey baby." I rub her back.

"I have something to show you, I'll be right back." She rushes out of the room.

"What was that all the about?"

"Jay scared her, he did some bitch made shit, telling her that I sell dope and kill people. He told her that I was gonna kill yall one day."

"Are you fucking serious?!" I ask shocked and mad at the exact same time. "He will never see her again....I give him a chance and he ruins it

by Babynie\_\_

Follow



Slight change: Zayn did nine years in prison instead of seven..i messed up the math.

## Chapter 16- Guilt

1 Week Later.3

Makiela.

"Zayn....im only 6 weeks pregnant, I don't need you to hold my hand and assist me with walking." I pull away from Zayn as him, Aabria and I walk down the hall of the hospital, today was my first doctors appointment in him and Bri is more excited than I am.6

"Girl come here before you catch a cramp or something." He holds me close to him, and I giggle, I look down at Aabria as she looks at us and smile, I think she was very happy to have a new father figure and a new sibling on the way.

Zayn blows in my ear and I cuss him out quietly, our nurse laughs as she guides us to our room. She stops at a specific one and looks down at her clip board.

"Alright Ms.Randall, let's see how much you weigh, I'm going to have you stand on this scale. I take off my puma flip flops and stand on the scale like she asked, she presses a certain button and it expose my weight.

"109 pounds..." She mumbles as she writes it down the clip board.<sup>38</sup>

"Skinny minnie....I can't wait to this baby put some meat on those bones." Zayn says.

"Boy I am thick....I'm just short that's all."

"I believe you baby." He chuckles. "The booty makes up for it so it's cool."

"Shut up ass hole." I grin.

"The cutest couple I ever met." The nurse snickers. "Alright honey step off of the scale, lets see your height."

I do as asked and lean againts the wall, as she hovers over me and measures my height. "Your just a little bit over five feet."

"Mommy you short." Aabria snaps.2

"Girl I'm taller than you though." I stick out my tounge.

"Okay you guys can go into the room." The nurse instructs.

\*\*\*\*

"This gel is not cold, it's warm." The nurse tells me, as I'm laying down on the hard cold bed. She pulls up my shirt and tuck a thin paper like covering in my pants so none of the gel won't get on my clothes.<sup>2</sup>

"You ready to hear the heart beat now?" She questions me with a giggle.<sup>10</sup>

"I'm ready." Aabria speaks for her self.<sup>1</sup>

I nod and feel my heart beating fast. "I'm kind of nervous but I'm ready."

Zayn sits back in his chair and stare at the monitor waiting to see his baby fetus pop up on the screen. He seemed very excited, it felt good to know that he actually wants a child with me and even made it happen because he wanted it.

She presses the ultrasound tool on my belly and stares at the monitor as well. My babies heart beat was beating so rapidly, it was crazy.

"So this your baby..." She points to screen.

"Aww..." Bri coos.

"Why does his heart sound like that? Is he okay?" Zayn asked concerned.<sup>3</sup>

"Lets double check here." She moves the tool around and more, and for three minutes we sat in silence.

"Uh oh." She says.<sup>6</sup>

"What do you mean uh oh?" I sit my head up and stare at her with my eyebrows knitted together.

"The reason the heart sounds like that is because it's two hearts. You my dear are having twins."<sup>54</sup>

I literally frozen in place and stared at her with my mouth open, twins. Did she really say I'm having twins? "Like the baby has two hearts, like twin twix bars or you mean human twins...like its two humans growing inside of me?"7

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 📺 📺 ♂

"We're having twins Kiela." Zayn smirks.

"Oh my god.....ima be tired as hell. I gotta change two diapers at a time, hold them at the same time, they gon kick me together, cry together and whine together.....not twins." I shake my my head3

"Mommy I can help were gonna be alright." Aabria tells me.

"Girl you got two blessings inside of you shut up." Zayn demands.3

"I'll give you guys some privacy and well be back with your check out papers." The nurse wipes the gel off of my belly and exits.



Zayn stands beside the bed and hold my hand. "I got you okay....ima help you raise our children."1

"I know Zayn...this is all kind of sudden because it wasn't planned. How am I going to start my career with three kids, I have to be a mother first."2

"Baby....I got you, your not going to miss out on nothing if I got something to do with it. When they come, I'm going to watch them while your at school and let you go into your office and work alright? I'm going to help you and make sure you get that bachelor's alright, were in this together."7

"Okay." I smile, he always says such sweet things I love it.

"You ready to be my baby mama?" He ask.

"I'm ready to be your wife...I already experienced being a baby mama." I say honestly.

He bust out laughing and slap my arm. "Girl you funny," I straight faced him until my phone begins to ring, Aabria takes it out my purse and hands it to me, I look at the caller id and it's some random number6

"Hello?" I answer.

"Wassup girl." A deep husky voice flows through my ears. "You don't know how call me?"

"Who is this?" I asked.

"For real though lil nigga? You ain't lock your favorite brother in."

I then smile once I begin to recognize the voice better. It's my older brother Aiyaan, I have not seen him since I was pregnant with Aabria, he moved out of the house when he was sixteen, my dad found out he was selling dope and

kicked him out, he ended up being a drug lord in the hoods of Brooklyn, his original hometown. "Aiyaan? Is this you?"

"Yep, what you doing?"

"Oh my god...I miss you! I'm at a doctors appointment, what you doin?"

"I am on my way to pops house." He says.

"Your in LA? Stop playin Yaan."

"Who is that?" Zayn questions.

"Shh.."

"I'm here.... I just got my rental and shit. You going be over there today right?"

"Yes! As soon as I leave the hospital."

"Alright I got some stuff for you and my niece."

"Aww thanks Yani bear" I call him by his nickname we talk for a few minutes and we disconnect our call.

"Who is Yani bear?" Zayn ask as soon as I put my phone down.

Aabria butts in. "Yeah who's Yani bear mommy?"

"Aiyaan is my brother. My biological brother." I give Zayn a stern look so he'll know its real.

"I thought the only kids your mom and pops had was ya two brothers and you."

"My dad has one child out side of my mother.....Aiyaan is his oldest. My dad didn't find out that Yaan was his son until I was like eight ...so I met him when he was fourteen. He is like my best friend. After we leave here, we going to my parents house so yall can meet him."3

\*\*\*

Zayn parks on the curb in front of my parents home and cut off the engine. "I hope that's your mama cooking."

He says referring to the barbecue smell lingering in the air. "I hope so too, me and these babies are hungry." I say as I exit the car, I open Aabria's door allowing her to get out.

We enter the house, and my nephew Jayjay charge at me and hugs on my waist tight. "Hey Auntie!"

"Hey baby."

Aabria sits on the couch and my brother Joey is sitting in the chair eating a bowl of greens. He looks at Zayn and give him a salty look.

"Well hello Joey." I smile. "What did mama cook?"

"Go see ugly."

I walk over to him and bend over to his ear. "I'm having twins." I whisper to him.

"You gon be fat ass hell." He laughs.

"Shut up boy." I push him by his head and my mother comes in the room.

"Don't start all that fighting, Hey Zayn baby." She goes to hug her .

"Hey Mrs.Randall, you look nice today." He compliments her.

"Thank you baby, I got the fruit basket you sent, it was good."

I turn my head and frown at the both of them. "Mama you better stop flirting with my man," Zayn always been nice to my parents, he sends her fruit baskets cause she loves fruit and veggies and he always buy my dad Jordans and give basketball tickets. He stole thier hearts.2

"Girl hush, did you get the ultrasound pictures."

I walk up to her and pull them out of my pocket, then hand it to her. She looks at and widened her eyes. "Kiela are you having twins?" She places her hand on my belly.

"Yes." I cheese.

"Child...yall gonna be spending all of me and your daddies money between birthdays and Christmas. We got five grand children already."

"Well sorry that I spreaded my legs ma...my bad."

Joey bust out laughing and I do too. Zayn sits on the couch next to Bria.

"Where is Aiyaan?" I ask.

"I don't know he should be here in a minute."

After a half an hour I stand on the porch with Zayn and my brother Malik as they share a blunt, I noticed that Zayn got a long with Malik...Joey just didn't feel Zay like that. They have a street conversation and I sit down and text Tysis on my phone.<sup>3</sup>

Minutes later I hear loud hip hop music from all the way around the corner, who sounds is booming that hard. An all



midnight black Hummer rides down the street and pulls in the drive way in front of my parents house. I see my brother bobbing his head as he parks the car straight.1

"Aiyaan!" I screech and run to the car, happy to my big brother. He stops the car and looks at me.

"Damn little girl, you all grown up." He says in a deep husky voice, his Brooklyn accent was so tight.

"Get out the car!" I open his door and he grins and take off his seat belt and turn his engine off and I pull him out the car and hold on to him tight.

He still looked the same, tall figure, almond brown skin and a good grade of curly hair. His body was built with weight and muscles, he sports a black shirt, that has Brooklyn written on it and baggy jeans, with all types of jewelry around his neck and on his wrist.8

"I missed you."

"I missed you too ma." He says as he hugs me close. Malik and Joey then comes and approach him, he has a heart felt moment with them and give them each brotherly hugs.

"Yall let him get in the house!" My mother yells as she stands in our door way.

We all follow her orders, all the kids except Bri, crowds Aiyann as he come in. My mother shoo them away, making them go downstairs then gives him a great big hug.

"I missed you Yaan."

"I missed you too moms...my pops here?" He ask.

"No not now baby, but he told me to tell you not to go anywhere until he arrives. He is excited to see you, he had

to work."

"I understand."

"Mom i think somethin is burning in there." Joey says.

"All man...I'll be right back." She walks out.

Aiyann looks around at all of our family pictures and decorations and I notice Zayn holding a serious expression on his face, Aiyaan then looks at him as well and his face tranforms into a hard mug. Malik sees this and say something.<sup>10</sup>

"Is everything good?" He ask.

"Why the fuck is this nigga here?" Aiyaan says through gritted teeth.

"Um what are you talking about?" My attitude then turns

salty, what does he have againts my man he doesn't even know him.

"This ya mans?!" His eyes move up down as he looks at me with a hint of disbelief on his face.

"Yeah I'm her man, long time no see Ox." Zayn speaks up.<sup>3</sup>

"You two know each other?" I turn to Zayn and before I could fully look back at Aiyaan he has gun aimed at Zayn, my brother's start trying to calm him down.

"Put the strap down Zayn." Joey says.

"Aiyann what are you doing?! Stop!"

"Nah I've been waiting for his ass." He chuckles.

I jump in front of gun and glare him in the eyes. "You ain't

bustin' no caps today, so you might as well put the gun down." I tell him.

"This ain't got nothin to do wit you Kiela, get out of the way." He says.

"This has everything to do me...this is my man! So your not gonna do nothin to him!" I shout. My mother come out of the kitchen and gasp at the sight of the gun.

"What is going on in here? Put that gun away and put it down now!" She demands, while giving him a stern look. Aiyann does what he is told, he glares at me as he gradually put the gun back in his pants.

"What is going on?" My mother asks.

"That's what I'm trying to figure out....he just went off." Joey says.

I looked back at Zayn and he was calm not even phased by Aiyaan.3

"This nigga and his crew killed Jeremy." Aiyaan says.

"Nigga no we didn't! Someone in your crew shot that bullet we didn't even have guns out."

"Nigga I saw you do it!"

"You didn't see me do it! Cause I wanted no part of that and didn't even pull out my strap that night! I didn't even have it!"

Jeremy was Aiyann's best friend when he was staying here, he was murdered in 2005 by a gang, I remember fifteen year old Aiyaan being desavated, they came from Brooklyn together and was friends for seven years.

I calmed myself down and looked back at Zayn. "You were in a gang?" I ask him.

"Yes but I didnt kill his dude....none of my crew did. They were shooting...and we were dodging the bullets cause we were on way to see the pastor we use to do his lawn and shit...some of us wasnt even strapped doing it out of respect. His niggas ran up on us and start blasting, so I think they shot the little nigga on accident tryna get to us."

Aiyann then begins to get heated. "You a motherfuckin' lie! Yall murked him!" He then charges at Zayn, but my mother and I holds him back.

"Ox, ain't nobody in my crew at that time shot your nigga, not that I know of. I know I didn't."

I start to feel over stimulated and stressed out, nausea begin to come over me and at this point I just needed somewhere to sit down.

"Lets just go." I speak home.

We arrive to our home, Zayn carries sleeping Aabria up stairs to her room. I sat my bag down and sit down on the couch trying to figure things out. Did Zayn really kill Jeremy? I trust him but I love my brother as well, I just don't want to take his word for it with out hearing the whole story.

He comes in the living room and sit on the comfy chair near the couch. We both sit in silence but it's shortly broken.

"So did you kill Jeremy?"

He shakes his head and furrow his eyes. "No Miki. I was fifteen and I was in a gang....and your brother was in a gang. All my niggas and his niggas were rivals. One night we got into it at a park, we had a brawl or whatever...so the next day they wanted a re match I guess and me and just a few



of my gang members was going to the pastors crib....he use to pay us to do his lawn...I and at least two of the other guys weren't strapped, out of respect for the pastor....so as we were walking your brother and his crew come and start shit we get into another fight and that's when guns start going off.....my thirteen year old cousin Cal got hit in the arm so I dragged him over to the bushes and I stayed low...now three of us didn't have guns one of us did...that was Bishop....Jeremy was shot after Bishop ran down the street with us cause we fled....so Im pretty sure someone out of they crew, shot Jeremy on accident....cause we were already down the street when they was crying and shit over him...that last gun shot went off and all we heard was them cussing and shit. One of them niggas killed him on mistake and think it was us...and I honestly think your brother did it cause that nigga ain't know how to aim that's why we got away so easily."6

"You swear."

"Baby I swear alright I'll tell who I killed in my life time .... I killed my best friend on mistake a few months back .

Tayresha's brother."

I close my eyes tight and shake my head. "Y- You killed him and Tayresha?"<sup>6</sup>

"Nah..." He explains how it was rumor that Him, Tysis and I killed her.... after our fight which was surprising. I didn't know a rumor even existed about me. He tells me that Tate believed that rumor and breaks into his house and they wrestle over the gun and Zayn accidentally shoots him dead. The tears and remorse in his eyes told me he was telling the truth.

"I believe you." I sit on his lap and rub his head.

"Do you wanna know why I went to prison?" He asks.

"Yes." I kiss his forehead. "Tell me everything, I won't judge you."

## Zayn's Flashback

Age 17.

I walk down the street anxious and heated, the strap on my waist was heavy but I was more than ready to fire it. It's been five years since I've been being molested and abuse by a man that was suppose to be my father figure....I was done with it. It was time to do something about it.

I make it to my house and my little sister was on the porch blowing bubbles, I sit next to her and she smiles at me.

"Can you take me to go get some ice cream." She ask.

"Um not right now....Shane here?" I questioned, eager to see him.

"Yeah he's in the house. But how was your day?" She grins.

"Fine. You doin okay?" I rub the bruise on her face that Shane gave her, he doesn't rape her he just beats her all the time, I fight him all the time but now it's time to kill for my baby sister.

"Yeah....I'm in the spelling bee."

"For real?" That's what's up." I kiss her forehead and wrap my arm around her neck.

"I know, im about to go to Tahjai's house."

She gets up and walks away while I go inside. I go into my room and give myself some time to prepare for this drastic event, something in my heart told me that he deserved this.

After two hours of procrastination, I go down stairs and see him looking through the fridge I aim the gun at the

refrigerator door, after a few seconds he closes it and stands in a shock when he sees the gun.

"Boy what you doin with that?" He ask nervously.

I stare him down and take big deep breaths feeling my self get anxious more than ever. "You aint have to hurt me everyday you know?"

"L-look Zayn put it down, let's talk this out alright son."6

"Oh now I'm your son....okay." I cock the gun back and put my finger on the trigger.

"Zayn wai-" I could've sworn I heard a girls strident voice behind me.

Bam Bam Bam Bam Bam!

I closed my eyes as I fired multiple shots, I opened them to see not only Shane's lifeless body but my baby sister was leaning on the counter with her hand over her stomach and blood pouring out of her mouth.<sup>38</sup>

"Leyana!" I rushed over to her and she fell into my arms, staining my clothes with her blood, I sit down and lay her in my arms and hold her hand tight.<sup>2</sup>

"Talk to me Lee! Come on talk!"

She stares into my eyes and her hand begins to tremble as it slips out of mine. "Leyana?" I shout.

Her eyes roll in the back of her head, and I cry out louder than I ever have. I asked myself why didn't I check to see if she was in the room too, why did I just assume she was still outside, why was I so selfish...why did I take my baby sister away from me why did it have to be like this?<sup>11</sup>

Makiela

Zayn buries his face in my chest and cries, his story was heart breaking, him telling me that he was molested, and killed his step father along with accidentally killing his sister put a hole in my soul.<sup>3</sup>

"I didn't mean to do it! I didn't know she was in there!" He cried.

"It's okay Zay, it's okay!" I shed tears as I stroke his cheeks.

"No it's not! She's gone Kiela, I didn't mean to do it! I ain't mean too! I want her back!" He screams.<sup>3</sup>

I hold his hand tight and rock back forth with him in my arms. "She forgives you Zay, God forgives you....just forgive your self." I whisper to him.

"I killed my sister man, I didn't mean too! I killed my sister! I thought she was still outsid-- I want her back!" He whines, I kiss his forehead,

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

Chapter 17- Forgive

Zayn

I walk into the closet, and retrieve a pair of my Jordans then step out, Makiela lays on the bed and watch my every move as if she was worried about me, last night I confessed to her that I murdered my attacker and my younger sister, I got a better response than I was expecting, Kiela held me through out the night and she told me to accept the fact that it was an accident, she didn't judge me for it. Which seem to lighten my mood.



"Baby where you going?" She ask me as she sits and lean over to the night stand and grab her phone.

"Um ima just take a ride and go grocery shopping, I'll pick Bri up from school today you ain't gotta worry about it."

"Nah she's still in her room sleep, I over slept and didn't even take her." She rubs her eyes and yawn.

"Oh well okay then...you want something while im out."

"No I just want you to cheer up and get your mind off of things." She says in a sweet tone, I sit on the bed and start putting on my shoes, and she sits behind me and wrap her thin arms around my neck, and start kissing me.

"You know your a great man right and that what happen in

the pass was an accident....don't beat yourself up about it baby. I'm here for you...I see the good in you. Sometimes things don't turn out right but we gotta keep it pushing...Don't feel guilty anymore. God and your sister forgives you....they know it was an accident and you were just clouded by pain. And if your mama don't forgive you, then so what, forget her. She let a man harm you for five years and expected you to just be okay and not be angry about it. You were a innocent child that was miserable...mistakes happen baby."

Those words settled my soul, that's why I love Kiela, cause she's always by my side no matter what and she says the things that Ive already thought about my self.

"I'm glad you ain't like every body else, a lot of my family stopped talking to me because of it. I never meant for it to happen....I-I just wanted me and my sister to be happy....I didn't want him to hurt us no more. I always told her I was gonna go to college and give us a better life."

"I would never judge you, I'm always going to help you

through the toughest times and you can still go to college baby."

"I didn't even finish high school." I chuckled. "I don't have no GED, no nothin."3

"It's not too late to get one." She says.

"I know...I'm just bouta go hang out I guess. Get all this shit off my mind."

She massages my shoulders as she presses her soft lips againsts my neck. "Do you need me to help relieve some of that stress baby?"

I lick my lips and nod my head. "Yeah I do."

She gets off of the bed and pulls me up making me stand. She gets on her knees and I watch as she unfastens my belt

and pull out my hard member, I tilt my head as her hand strokes back and forth on my dick.

Her sultry lips wraps around the head, and she sucks hard, she allows it to go down her throat then releases it for only a minute. Meanwhile my eyes are rolling in the back of my head, I was ready for more.

I didn't like treating my girl like a hooker in these type of moments, so I gently grabbed her chin to guide her back to my rod, she smiles and take it back into her mouth and sucks hard, I begin to pant, the feeling of me rubbing back and forth againsts her throat felt well, she moans as uses her tounge to lick all over my shaft.

I felt the tension leaving my mind, soul and body. The way she looked into my eyes, made me even harder and I could tell that when I gripped her hair that made her wet.

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🍆 🚫 ♂

After ten minutes I finally feel the urge to bust, but I wait and pull Makiela up. After getting her clothes off I stroke her for a few minutes and nut inside of her.

\*\*\*\*

I walk down the clear hall to get to my mother's apartment, I take multiple breaths and stare at her door, contemplating on weather or not I should bother her just to be rejected again.

I knock on the door and wait for an answer, after a minute or so she opens the door, she wore a pink robe with her thick long hair and rollers.

"Hey ma, these are for you." I hand her the pink roses I bought along with a box of Michel Cluizel Chocolates, that ran me a little over eight hundred dollars, but I know she loves chocolate.<sup>16</sup>

"What do you want Zayn?" She ask.

"Mom...I came to you and ask for your forgiveness....it took me almost ten years to forgive you....But I did it. Because you my mom and I want to be connected with you. I killed Leyana...that was wrong." I take a deep breath . "I'm sorry ma...you know I didn't do it on purpose."

"Zayn you took my baby away from me."

"Mom you let Shane abuse her...you were a crack head and let a man come before your children....he raped your son and abused your daughter....he abused and raped you. If I can forgive you for the shit you brought upon us why can't you forgive me. Mom...im sorry alright?"

She sets the flowers and chocolates down on the side table near the door, and she surprisingly gives me a hug than she lets go quicky.2



"You forgive me."

"Yeah I-I forgive you Zayn....I just never understood why'd you bring the gun in the house anyway....Leyana was my baby."19

"She was mine too ma...I think she would like to see us come together, what you think?" I asked.

"We can try to over come it....but Its gonna be hard."1

I pull Makiela's ultra sounds out of my pocket and hand it to my mother, she glances down st it and squints to get a closer look.

"What is this?"

"You have two grand kids on the way."

"Do I?" She smiles and fold her lips together. "Come in," she turns on her heels and take a seat on her comfy chair . I do as I'm told and close the door behind me, it felt nice to be in her calm presence and not her bitchy one.

"When is your girl friend due?"

"January 26th." I grin.35

"Hm...that's nice. How many months is she."

"Only 6 weeks." I tell her. "She has a daughter."

"That's nice." She sets the pictures on the table and leans in her chair, while staring back at me.

"Mom did you really love Shane?"

"Yeah....and you took him." She says,33

"So....you knew he was raping your son and abusing your baby girl but you still loved him?" I asked.

She stays silent and shake her head.<sup>1</sup>

"Okay....I knew he was touching you and I knew he was hitting on Lee. Around that time I was on drugs and you know that." She says sternly. "That crack, the heroine and Shane seem to be all I cared about, okay? I wasnt the best mother ....I know and I'm sorry Zayn okay, is that you want to here?"<sup>2</sup>

"Yeah and tell me that you love me."

She stands up and sits on my lap and kisses my forehead. "I-I love you."<sup>13</sup>

"Your not on drugs still, are you?"

"I still smoke weed but I've been clean from drugs for eight years now. Zayn sometimes I wanted to write you but....I was depressed I knew it wasn't all of your fault...i was mad that I allowed it to happen."1

"We can leave it in the pass ma.....I just want you to be apart of your grand kids life and mine as well....but you gotta let go of the pass"

"Okay son.."20

\*\*\*\*

I sit in my office and face time Aabria, she got a hold of Makiela's phone some how and called me.

"Daddy what you doing?" She ask.

"I'm am at work princess, what you doing? Is mommy okay?"

She brings the camera closer to her big brown eyes and make goofy smiles. "Yeah she's sleeping on the couch....can I come to your job when its bring your daughter to work day."6

"Oh nah, you can't come to daddy job baby. It's not safe for kids, but well hang out."

I then hear a knock press againts my door, and it opens. Branco walks in with Daniela behind him.1

"Bri?" I cut Aabria off as she talks.

"Yes?"

"Daddy has to go, tell me what you want me to bring you home for a snack."

"Um....I want, a bike and brownies."14

"A bike?" I chuckle. "Ima bring you something home tonight princess, I love you."

"I love you too."

"Ok hang up now."

She hangs up and I take a breather and look up at Branco, Daniela was wearing a tight black dress that complimented her curves and showed off her cleavage and her long weave was hanging down her back, she sits across from me.

"Wassup Danny Star." I call her by her stage name. "Branco what's going on, I see you made it back to your town."

He goes into the my small refrigerator and grab a beer. "I'm under the impression that you fired Daniela."

"Yes Unc, I did. She keeps playing with my buisness, disrespecting my woman it seems like since you left she's been lacking, even letting the new dancers show her up and take her shine."

"I understand that I gave the buisness over to you but I started this club and I'm partly still the owner you will not fire Daniela, she makes the club coins, she's better than any other new girl you got Zayn."<sup>12</sup>

"Well if she's better, why do I have girls making me more money...I don't need this type woman in this buisness."

"Just give me one more chance." Daniela butts in. "I won't even talk to your little girl friend any more."

"Nephew.....I still profit off of this buisness and im telling you that you must keep her she brings tricks in."

"Whatever man....I just want her to stop being a thirsty hoe."

"I can do that." She speaks for her self.<sup>3</sup>

"Alright then." Branco scratches his nose and walks towards the door. "Nephew, ima get out of here, you talk to her and lay down the rules."<sup>1</sup>

"Fo sho'." I huff.

He exits the room, and I huff, then I pull out a binder and begin adding up all of my expenses, Daniela just sits there and watches me.

"You can go."

"I wanted to appologize."

"Okay apology accepted, now you can go." I say in a bit of a harsh tone.<sup>3</sup>



"I know who took the money." She blurts out.

I lean in closely. I already know who did it, but I just want to hear what she know. "Okay baby girl....tell me."5

"Jay....and Marc let him in here." She says referring to one of my security guards.

A knock then presses againts my door, she stands up and open for me. Aiyaan then entets the room; I have no clue how he found out where I was, we make eye contact, and he greets me with a head nod.

"What's good B?" He asks, as he rubs his hands together and check out Daniela as she stands near him.4

"How may I help you?"

He walks over to my desk and sit across from me. "I just wanna bury a hatchet fam, your my sisters mans and you the fauva of her children. I'm sorry about all that shit that went down yesterday."15

"You know I ain't tripping off of that shit BK, you wasn't gonna shoot any way...I just hope you understand that none of my boys took Jeremy out."

"It's coo. We fam man....I just wanna bury the hatchet."9

We have a deep conversation that lasts for a while and it irks my soul that Daniela is still lingering around my office, she was now vacuuming the floor, this bitch is going to be a problem. As Aiyaan is talking, I take a short glasmpe at her, he then turns around and looks at her too.2

"You creeping around on my sister or suhin?"

"Nah...Aye Daniela!" I shout over the noise of the vacuum,

she cuts it off and turns to us.

"Yes?" I questioned.

"Come throw that neck real quick."<sup>14</sup>

"For you." She slightly grins.

"Nah for my bro." I laugh inside of my head and then I look at Aiyaan. "This is on the house. Ima leave y'all two alone and go see what poppin in VIP."<sup>1</sup>

I stand up and make it to the door, then I stop and lean over to Daniela. "You wanted to be a hoe and give some top, so here's your chance to shine." I whisper to her before walking out.<sup>31</sup>

Makiela

2 weeks later

"Mommy I need help with this." Aabria says as she sits at the kitchen table doing her home work, I take a break from making her after school meal and walk over to her, I look down at the paper to see a picture of a purse, they were asking her to spell it.

"Come on let's sound it out pur-- p-ur-se, what do you hear?"

"I hear a P." She states.

"Okay write that down."

I then hear the front door open, letting me know that Zayn was home. I see him slowly wheeling a bike in the house and a heavy set woman was behind him, they looked identical. She wore a blue shirt with simple black capri pant with black sandals.<sup>2</sup>

Her hair was wavy, the same texture as Zayn's. It hangs pass her shoulders. She looked pretty young. She begins looking around the house in amazement.

"Shh..." Zayn tells me as he brings the bike in the kitchen.  
"Bria?"

She turns around with her mouth wide open. "A bike!" She hops from her seat and runs over to Zayn, he's been talking about purchasing her bike because she's been begging him for it, the bike was gorgeous, it was Kawasaki branded, and the colors of baby blue and lime green, it had a lunch box and water bottle in the front of it.

"You like it? I tried to order a pink but they didn't have one."

"No! No I love blue and green! I love all colors" She says excitedly as she sit on the bike. "Can we go ride it?"

"In a minute, I want yall to meet someone." He gestures for the woman to come in the kitchen and she does just that,

Zayn wraps her arm around her.

"Ladies this is my mom Angel, and ma this is my girl friend Makiela and her daughter Bri."

I smiled and held my hand out for a shake, she smiles and shakes my hand. "It's nice to meet you Ms. Walton."

"Oh no no, my maiden name is Warrior, just call me Angel." She insist. "This is a nice house yall got." She looks around the kitchen. "What do you do for a living?"<sup>1</sup>

"I'm an upcoming designer and stylist, but for now I repair clothing and stitching for rich folks in downtown LA."

"Hmm that's nice."<sup>15</sup>

"Baby can you show my mother company while I help Bri practice on her bike at the park." Zayn ask.

"Of course love, y'all be careful. Here take her homework if y'all decide to take a break."

"Kiela no, she'll finish the homework when we get back."1

"Okay whatever."

They exit the house and I wrap the food up that I was preparing for Bria. "You can have a seat Angel." I tell her, she sits at the table and place her purse in the empty seat next to her.

"Can I offer you something to eat or some coffee maybe?"

"I'm okay, what do you want with my son?"8

"Pardon?" I knit my eyebrows together.5

"What do you want with my son, he's been telling me a lot about you, like how he pays for your little girl practice and

how he bought you a lil scholarship. I feel like your not all in love with him....tell me something , did you start that house fire just so he could be trapped with you....you probably just diggin for gold." She goes into her purse then pull out a ciggarate and lights it.28

A ball of breath then gets stuck in my throat and I try my hardest not to lash out. "Well....I actually love Zayn. Everything that he has done for me I didn't have to ask for, he seen my struggle so he stepped in and helped out, even if he hadn't done all of those things I would still be with him, money is the last thing on mind and I must admit sometimes it's overwhelming being around his life style that's surrounded with money....because he spoils us and I don't always want him to."

I confess, than I walk over to her and stand in her personal space.

"But tell me something, what do want in my man? Because from what he told me, you allowed him to get molested, you allowed a man to come between you and your children and



yall never even got to develop a bond, miss I have to say I don't like you, because you put him through hell, I understand he murdered your daughter but that was an accident....you probably was more upset that your man died?" I roll my neck.36

"So tell me something, why all of a sudden you forgive him and your coming around and acting like you care, is it only because you see he has the money and owns the most popular strip club in Los Angeles....so since your mommy you think your entitled to some of his cash too? He bought you an apartment, clothes and he told me he gave you almost 5,000 dollars so why you so forgiven all of a sudden?"

I knew I was right because she stays on silent mode, I hated that I had to disrespect his mother but she came for me, something don't sit right with her and I can feel it.15

\*\*\*\*

Tysis and I sit in my office in chat as I work on Alicia's

wedding dress.

"Girl I am beyond happy for you, this makes me so emotional. Now I need a good man." She says.

"What happen to Danarro?" I ask.

"We seperated...I want to keep it that way. But girl you having twins. How does it feel?"

I smile and take a break from the sewing machine. "It feels amazing, I love him girl but I had to check his mama today."

"You know nothing comes between a man and his mama girl."

"You'd be surprised." I mumbled.

"You sure I can stay the night?" She ask.

"Girl Zay do not care..yes you can stay for a few days and chill with me."

After an half in hour, I go into Zayn and I bedroom to straighten up, he was at the club so I'll be sleeping alone tonight, I clean all of the ashes up that he leaves on the dresser, I hate when I find ashes everywhere.

I go into the bathroom since I had use it, and I hear the telephone ringing so but I ignore since I was already occupied, once I get out a message is being left on the answering machine.

"Wassup boss, um I tried to call you wasn't answering. But we gon murk that nigga Jayson tomorrow night, I just wanted to let you that we gon' get the job done for you, hit me back when you get chance."23

I freeze into place, did he really put hit out on Jayson?19

Question and Answer.

How do you feel about Makiela and Zayn's mother?10

Was this chapter boring and please be honest? Did you like it, I honestly feel like it was boring, be honest.10

Should Zayn really have a hit put out on Jay...how do you feel about.14

Guys im tired....so my updates are gonna be coming slow.3

How do you feel Aiyaan?

by Babynie\_\_

Follow

## Chapter 18-Rocky

Makiela

Zayn enters our bed room, I look at the clock and the time was 12:30am, he kicks off his shoes along with taking off his hoodie.

"Hey." He greets me.

"I have to ask you some thing." I rise up and stand beside him as he goes into the drawer and store a stack of money in there.

"Wassup?"

"Did you put a hit out on Jay?" I ask.

He knits his eyebrows together as he turns to me, holding a demented facial expression. "Where'd you here that?"

"Your hit man left a message." I fold my arms and stare at him as he avoids looking at me. "Did you put hit out on him? Tell the truth."1

"Yeah....why you care?" He lifts up his shoulders with his eyebrows still furrowed.

"I care because that's the father of my child and I also care because you don't need to mixed in any trouble." I explain.14

"Well I found out that yo' baby daddy killed Lil Mikey and the surveillance video showed that he robbed me out of those grands." He tells me.1

"Okay Zay, I understand all of that but instead of killing him why don't you go to the police."75

He looks at me as if I said something so ridiculous. "Okay so ima go to the police and tell them that I found my cousin dead in my trap...that I hold illegal drugs and weapons in, Jay can snitch on that and I'll be back in prison...some shit you just don't tell the cops ma."8

"Zayn....you need to call off that hit. It's senseless just to do go on and do that."1

"So what? You still in love with that nigga or something? Bri don't need him...you don't need him...so why you trippin?"14

I screw up my eyes and cock my head to the side, why would he even form up his mouth to say something like that. "I'm trippin' Zayn?" I asked pointing at my chest.

"Yeah you tripping."

"No nigga your trippin, that's a life....that's what's wrong with niggas these days they think they can just take a

human being out of this earth cause they feel like it, but repercussions come with the shit. You can't kill him, one day he'll come to his senses when it comes to Bri....you shouldn't be thinking about taking a life anyway!" I scream at him.<sup>35</sup>

"He killed my cousin, I don't know where you from but in South Central you don't kill a nigga family and get away with it, yo' ass dying too if that's the case."<sup>12</sup>

I step closer to him and put my finger in his face. "I don't know where you from, but where I'm from we play things smart. You'll be better off setting him up....do something that's gonna get him in the pin for a few years....but don't kill him because all that crime falls back on you."<sup>26</sup>

"Nah he'll be better off dead." He says ignoring my idea all together.

"You are so fucking so stupid." I start walking away.<sup>1</sup>



"What?" He pulls my arm.

"I said your stupid."

"Well that nigga is already gonna be dead by tomorrow night, so I don't care what you say." He shrugs.

I then start to think he has an evil streak or something.

"Zayn you have to think rationally about this..don't go with the first thought that comes to your head because then it would result into being a bad outcome...like the same thing that happen when you went to jail --" I cut my self off, because the last thing I wanted to do was offend him and I know he hates his pass.17

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔪 🧨 ♂

"What same thing that happen?" He asked with his face scrunched up.

"Nothing Zayn." I look down at the ground, and shamed myself for even bringing it up.<sup>3</sup>

"No tell me what you were gonna say, I wanna hear it." He comes closer to me backing me into the wall.

"Zayn you just have to think things through before you do just any thing, cause horrible things can end up happening....like when you murdered your -- your step dad you ended up killing your sister too, because you wasn't-- I feel like you weren't thinking rationally.....y-you kind of just went for it and you got two bad results in return."<sup>32</sup>

His face transforms into a strong mug and he cups my face tightening his grip on my jaws, it hurt so bad but I just stood there and looked into his eyes. "You saying it's my fault?! Huh?! Is that what you saying?!"

I push him off of me and raise my hands up slightly. "Calm down."

He pins me down on the wall, and I can see what I said causing his temper to get heated. "You see you just like everybody else judging me!"

"I'm not judg--"

He cups my face once again, and I can feel my mouth swelling up from the touch.

"No you judging me like the rest of those motherfuckers!"

Right then and there, I pushed him off of me and begin throwing blows. "I don't give a fuck about what your going through, you ain't gon put your hands on me!"

"Move!" I push him off of me, I lean on the dresser and rub my face that was sore along with throbbing.

"Baby I'm sorr--"

"Just leave me alone....just go back to the club or something...go away." I say on the verge of tears.23

Our door then flies open and Tysis walks in with a butcher knife in her hand. "Are you okay Makiela?!" She says while eyeballing Zayn.36

"I'm okay Ty..."

Zayn puts on his shoes and slightly pushes me out of his way as he grabs something out of the dresser. He kisses my cheek and walk pass Tysis, exiting the room.12

I lean back on the wall and cover my face as tears begin to fall in the palm of my hands. I hear Tysis setting the knife down then she gently rubs my arm.6

"Did he put his hands on you Kiela, you can tell me."

"I'm fine Ty, it wasn't that serious. It was just our first argument, I never seen him angry before so I was kind of

scared."9

Diamond12

I sit on the couch and do my homework as Mariah Carey Baby Doll plays from my phone, I hear a knock at my door, so I rise up and look through the peep hole, to see Zayn standing in the hall.20

I quickly open the door and smile at him, "Wassup, what you doing here so late?" I asked.

"Just comin through to check on you and give you some thing." He says as he walks in, I close the door and hold a wide a grin on my face.

"That's sweet." I say as I sit next to him on the couch, he pulls out a bundle of cash and looks at me.

"What do you need for this week?"<sup>2</sup>

"I need my phone bill paid." I tell him.

He nods and take out a few hundreds then places it on the table. "How has school and work been going?"

"It's been fine, I get my check soon and I got an A+ in math."  
I cheese.<sup>2</sup>

He turns to me and smirks. "For real champ?"

"Yep...you wanna see my report card?"

"Yeah." He licks his lips, I stand up and walk over to my book bag and pull it out, then I position myself back on the couch, I hand it to him and he scans it.



"Wow.... you did good. Just get that C- in Chemistry up." He tells and gives it back to me.<sup>1</sup>

I look at his face, noticing that it was slightly lumped. "Did you get in a fight?" I question in a worried tone.

"Nah." He says as he sulks in his seat and goes into his pocket, he retrieves a small bag of weed, I couldn't help but notice the small white rocks in it, it was a great amount mixed in the marijuana.<sup>29</sup>

He grabs my rellos that are on the table and open them without my permission, and we stay in silence as he sprinkles the weed into the rello.

"What's that white stuff in it? Who gave this to you?"<sup>1</sup>

"Don't worry about it." He demands. "And it's not laced that's just how the weed looks, I see you looking, I shouldn't smoke her but I need to before I go to back home."<sup>7</sup>

I lift up my shoulders, and go to the rest room. After a few minutes I come out, drying my hands off. Zayn smiles at me in a goofy way as he puffs his blunt.

"What?" I asked.

"I heard you in there....you can sing." He licks his lips, he heard me singing At Your Best By Aaliyah.10

"I can not sing." I front, then go into the mini fridge and grab a Capri Sun. I sit next to Jim and grab my phone to see if I have any text messages.4

"Sing for me." He says while staring at me.5

"No." I smile, I could feel myself getting nervous for some reason him being here was a dream come true, because I love me some Zayn he is so fine and he's so nice to me but this was over whelming at as well.

"Please, Diamond you gotta pretty voice. Let me hear it."1

"Okay don't laugh." I touch his hand.

"I won't." He shakes his head.

I close my eyes and begin to sing the gospel melody my mother use to sing me. "ohhhhhhhhhhhhhhh, ohhhhhhhh  
ooohhhh no more, cloudy day. the storm is  
over now. no more, cryin at night, the storm is over now.  
no oo ooo more! sickness in my body  
the storm is over now."7

I open my eyes to see tears developing in his eyes. "You gon'  
make a g cry girl.....damn that gave me chills, I'm not playin  
no games. And you wanted to work in my club, when you  
have the voice of Whitney Houston?"2

"Stop lying to me." I give him a stale expression.

"I'm not lying to you, you got something special. That voice can get you somewhere, but you gotta keep your head in the game and outta the gutter. You sixteen, you have all the time in the world to party, and fuck you know. But focus on getting everything straight."

"And I have, I haven't been messing with any boys....and I haven't went to any parties. I even keep the place clean now." I motion my finger around the room.

"I see it, just keep it up and stay in the mindset your in. What happen to your peanuts?" He ask.<sup>2</sup>

"Peanuts?" I asked confused.

"My bad, I mean parents. Ya folks." He chuckles.<sup>15</sup>

"My mom got incarcerated for robbery, and my father.....I don't know much about him. My mom got locked up when I

was nine, so I stayed with my granny....and her husband was touching me so I told my teacher at school and CPS got involved and I ended up getting put into foster care...and the foster family I had was just abusive....So I ran away and stayed at a girls home...but I left there cause all the girls raped me cause they were gay and way older than me...so ever since I was 14 I've been on the streets, taking care of my self."2

"Damn...." He shakes his head. "That's fucked up." I could tell that he was real high and not a normal high either, he seem a bit off but I doubt that he laced his marajuana.

After a half an hour, his phone begins to ring. He was knocked out on my couch, I didn't want to wake him so I picked it up and it was Makiela.

"Hello?" I answered with an attitude.

"Who is this?" She questions.

"Zayn's friend..who is this?" I played stupid as if I didn't already know.

"This is his girl friend, where is he at?"

"Oh he's right here sleeping on my couch...he'll be home in the morning you don't have to worry about him...I got him."

"Okay bitch keep him then." She hangs up and I chuckle at myself. I knew it was just a matter of time that he'd become mine.<sup>49</sup>

Zayn.

The sun rays hit my eyes, causing them to open, I look ahead of me to see a brown skin beauty, naked like a new born baby. I tilt my head to the side and gaze at the sight of pussy....she was bent over drying her self off with an towel. This girl was fine<sup>10</sup>

But I then come to the realization that it's Diamond.

"Yooo...why you don't have no clothes on?" I snap.

She turns around with a startled look on her face, and covers her self with the towel. "I'm sorry I thought you were still asleep."

"It doesn't matter if I was still sleep, you just don't walk around like that when its a man around."

"You can always leave." She says with sass in her tone.

"Alright, I shouldn't be here any way." I grunt as I stand up and snatch my keys and phone off of the small wooden table.<sup>1</sup>



"Zayn wait." She walks over to me blocking my way. "I ain't mean that."

I take a deep breath. "It's cool D. I gotta get out of here though, before Kiela start assuming shit."

"Okay." She says in soft tone, then stands on her tippy toes to give me a soft kiss on the cheek. I push her off, then open the door.<sup>1</sup>

I make it to my car and my phone is steady vibrating in my pocket, I enter my vehicle and pull the phone out of my pocket to see 38 new messages from Makiela.

"What the fuck bruh?" I say to my self, I open them.

Miss.Walton   - you are a bitch ass nigga, I want you to know that. How dare you go to another bitch house and sleep with her. All I was trying to do was help ur dumb ass, so you won't go back to prison but noooo nooo you wanna be all hard and shit, and then you fucking another bitch?! You do not know how mad I am...like really? I



don't know about this anymore...you actin' real crazy  
Zay..and I don't know why. I'm over here crying over you  
because I'm sprung and you don't even care, your over there  
fucking her! 😞 okay nigga she can keep you then....I am  
done, real shit....like you don't know how long I've been  
crying....I really shouldn't feel this way.....we couldve talked  
shit out but no you wanna be petty with your stupid ass and  
fuck another bitch...tell that bitch to be your girl then....I was  
fine by myself before and I'll be fine now<sup>100100</sup>22

"What the fuck?" I mumble, that wasn't the only  
paragraph, I had about twenty more to read, I put my phone  
in my pocket and put my key in the ignition.15

\*\*\*\*

I go into the house to see Aabria on the couch fully dressed  
watching cartoons, I slam the door and she turns to me.  
"Daddy!" She runs over to me and I pick her up.

"Hey Bri...where mommy at?" I give her a kiss and let her

down.

"Upstairs." She response.

"Okay sit here, I'm going to go talking to her."

I walk upstairs to see, Makiela putting her medium length hair in a pony tail, she was dressed as well, I wonder where they were going.

"Where are you about to go Kiela?"

She ignores me and start loading her purse with a few make up items and she places her sun glasses on.

I grab her arm and she snatches away. "Don't fucking touch me!"

"Let me talk to you." I say calmly.

"We have nothing to talk about." She folds her arms.

"Look your not leaving me alright, where gonna talk this out, last night I did not cheat om you I went to Diamond's crib and gave her some money and sh--"

"How old are you?" She cuts me off.

"Babe li--"

"How old are you?" She repeats her self sternly

"26."

"Diamond is sixteen years old! That little girl is 10 years younger than you!" She pokes me in my head. "So tell me why the fuck is yo' grown ass at a fucking little girls house, at 4am. You can't help everybody bruh, she don't want your

help!"26

"Listen alright nothin happen, we just chilled with each other alright? I ain't touch her....im just being a brother to her."

"Whatever, do you. I don't even care."

hapter 19- dumbfounded+

Makiela

2 Months Later.

It's been two months and would you believe me if I told you that Zayn and I live in the same house hold and barely talk. I decided to stay and work it out, but he wants to stay out to eight in the morning and give me the silent treatment most

of the time, like a nigga answered my phone telling him I was sleep in his bed.<sup>1</sup>

He doesn't hold me anymore, he doesn't come to any of my appointments with me it's like we fell out. But he still treats Aabria the same, regardless of what we're going through and I can respect that.<sup>16</sup>

"Makiela." I hear a familiar voice call out my name as I'm walking down the school hall. I turn around to see Ms.Jopin.

"Hey Ms. J, why didn't we have class today?"I questioned.

"I have a class that starts now, this morning I had to take my nieces to school, but how are you and the babies." She places her hand on my pudgy belly, I was now three months.<sup>1</sup>

"We're fine.....but I lost five pounds so my doctor put me on supplements and I have to constantly eat, they want me to

gain 20 pounds in two months...so I'm trying."

"Did you eat something today, do we need to go to lunch or something?"

"No....im fine I'm going to cook me up something once I get home, I'm bouta go there now." I place a portion of my hair behind ear.

She lays her hand on my shoulder. "I wanted to tell you that it's a ball coming up in Holly Wood, and all upcoming designers, stylist, models...everyone who has something to do with the fashion category is going to be there, and its gonna be a contest involved for the best fashion designer along with stylist and model, and I think you should go...and show off your designs." She smiles.

"Are you going to be there?" I squint.

"Yeah, of course. The contests offers 10,000 dollars for the

best top three fashion designer's....I believe the event is September 22nd."4

I nod my head in understanding. "Alright, I'll look into it."

"Alright and go get something from the vending machine, you need to eat darling."

"Okay I will." I giggle.

After a few minutes I make it to the vending machine, I was very hungry....some days I'm not and I have to force my self to eat. This pregnancy has been making me very nervous and stressed, but I'm going to do whatever I gotta do to make sure my babies come out healthy.

I look at what I want for a second and make a decision on getting a large back of Fritos. I pressed a certain button and the bag of chips drop.1

"I'll get it." Daniela bends down and get the chips for me, then she hands them to me.

"Thank you." I mumble as I roll eyes.

"I wanna be a woman and apologize for the litttle thing that went down a few months ago, I came on to your man, we never had any history what so ever."

"That's good to know." I shrug.

"I know your a really good girl, but I need to tell you that Zayn is always getting lap dances from some of the girls who work at the club."21

I take a deep breath and stare at the ceiling. "Thanks for telling me, but I honestly don't care." I walked away and stormed out the building.



After twenty minutes I was on my way home, I sung along to Drake's One Dance while I was at a red light. My phone then begins to ring, I huff and pull it out of my purse, the caller id revealed it to be my older brother, Aiyaan.3

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🔫 🧱 ♂

"Hello?" I answered.

"Wassup ma?"

"Nothin what you doin?" I ask as I turn the corner.

"Nothing at pops crib, I'm thinking about just staying here."

"Mm..okay." I respond, my brother and I have been on good terms, he apologize for pulling a gun out on Zayn but I was still skeptical about him, but he's my brother so I treat him that way.

"You wanna go to lunch with me?" He questions.

"Sure....I got some time on my hands. Where at?"

"Roscoe's...you know the pancake joint, off of Pico Blvd." He states.<sup>1</sup>

"Alright you wanna meet there now?" I asked.

"Yeah."

\*\*\*\*

I enter the resteraunt to see my brother already seated at a table, when he sees me he stands up with open arms.

"Wassup lil sis." He says while hugging me.

"Hey Yani." I rub his back.

He pulls my chair out for, and insist me as I sit down. "Thank you." I set my purse beside me on the table and pick up the menu.

He sits down and place both hands on his fitted cap. "How you been?" He questions.

"Tired...just going to school and work....and being a mommy to Bri." I chuckle, as I glance down at menu and find a meal that suits me perfectly.

"How she doin'? And what baby daddy been up to?" He ask as he sips on his glass of lemonade.

"Bria is doing great, she has her first recital coming up, so she's nervous but ready as well and Zayn....is just ripping and running the streets I guess he's good."

He nods. "I've been trying to get at him, maybe me and him

could be buisness partners or somethin'." He voices.

"Yeah...that's not a bad idea. Zayn needs help....in my opinion. He has a lot to handle....he needs someone loyal by his side tho' Aiyaan, he don't need anyone tryna use him or flip the script."

"Look ma, I'm cool wit' ya mans now. I told y'all the shit that happen a few months is dead to me....I don't mind workin' wit him. You should put in a good word for me." He rubs his chin and open up his menu as well, then begin to scan it.5

"Alright I will." I sau as I fold my lips.

"Sis, have you really been okay? Be honest, because I know when something is wrong wit' you. You can't hide shit from me."

I twist my lips and raise my left eyebrow in a silly manner.

"And how do you figure something is wrong with me?" I

asked.

"Because....its easy to tell when some is unhappy and distraught. I'm sure it has something to do with love as well...just by the way you talk about ol' dude." He chuckles.

"Well Zayn and I kind of been distant.....like we live in the same house and sleep in the same bed sometimes, but we don't communicate. Like we talk we say good morning and tell each other our work schedule and debate on who's picking Bri up ....but we don't converse like we use to, and that bothers me. We haven't had sex...not nothing. It's kind of like living with a stranger."5

"Well....y'all need to work on that, I know couples are suppose to be each others bestfriend....if yall don't talk on a high level every day than yall relationship is unhealthy. Yall gotta get ya mind right for these kids that's about to come in the world and if yall go with out fucking for too long, he's bound to get the pleasure from someone else." He says as he wipes the corner of his mouth with a napkin.

"Right." I nod my head.

Zayn

I stare at the 14,000 dollar necklace and contemplated on whether I wanted it or not, I knew I wanted to make Makiela happy but I didnt want to waste money, her attitude has been kind of off, I can't blame it on her though her hormones is causing it.<sup>4</sup>

Since we kind of fell out, I decided to go out on a shopping spree and buy her a few name brand things.

"Have you made a decision yet sir?" The employee asked with a wide smile. She was a middle aged mulatto woman with green eyes and brown hair.

"I don't know yet." I rub my chin as I look at her.



"Well who is the special lady?" She ask me with a genuine smile.

"Um my girl friend, we been together for eight months and I wanted to show her that I appreciate her.....cause we kind of fell out."

"Yeah you love her if your spending fourteen grand on her." We both share a laugh with each other. "Um...I think it's the right thing to do ecspecially if you two fell out, she would jump back into your arms after seeing this."9

I nod my head and touch the necklace a little. It was a ravishing Princess Cut, Diamond Solitaire Pendant, it's yellow gold and equals up to 18 Karots.1

"You'll think she like it?" I asked a bit insecure, I honestly don't know what women like.

"Women love diamonds sir, they don't care what it looks

like." She giggles.

"You know what I'll take it, go on and ring it up for me." I give her my debit card.

"Go ahead in put in your pin."

After putting in my pin to purchase the necklace, I feel a tap on my shoulder, I turn around to see a beautiful black beauty behind me.<sup>16</sup>

This girl stood about 5'4 feet tall, with a warm dark caramel complexion along with big almond colored eyes.

Her body is shaped in a hour glass frame, she's not filled with silicone like some girls , her body seems all natural.

"Wassup." I grin at her. "Do I know you?" I asked.

"Um no, but my cousin is Kandie, she's back there." She points back at Kandie, who is one of my responsible

dancers. I lift up my hand to wave at her as she was by a mannequin and she waved back, she then starts making her way over to us.

"Yeah I know Kandie, that's my home girl." I chuckle.

"Hey Zay." Kandie says as she approaches us.

"Wassup, what you got goin on?" I asked confused.

"This is my cousin Chanelle, and she's been thinking about getting in the dancing industry or whatever, she wanted to know if you could give her a chance."

I gaze at Chanelle and bite on my lip as I check out her figure, she was a fine little chick. "How old are you?" I asked

"20." She responds quietly with her head hung low. I could tell she was going to be a shy one.

"Alright...well have her come in for audition. Have you been training her or taking her to any pole lessons." I scratch my head.

Kandie runs her fingers through her long curly weave. "Yes she's been practicing for months Zayn."

"Alright well....bring her in tonight and I'll check her out."

"Alright." Kandie smiles, and they both walk away.

"Here you go sir." The employee catches my attention, I turn to her grab the gift bag, along with my debit card out of her hands.

"I hope you girl friend likes it." She slightly frowns at me.44

\*\*\*\*

I walk into my home with about fifteen one bags filling my hands they werent that heavy to me. Makiela was sitting on the couch while Aabria was sitting in between her legs and she was doing her hair, putting twist in it.

"Daddy did you buy me anything?" Aabria ask.

"Of course I did." I carry the things up stairs and start taking them out of the bags and laying them out on the bed, I spent over a 98,000 dollars just for Makiela through out the week, some of the stuff I already bought it was just sitting in my trunk . I also bought Aabria a few toys and bought unisex clothes for the babies.5

After an half an hour she comes in the room, and lift her prescription glasses up on her nise . "It looks like a robbery in here." She jokes, then goes into the bathroom and wash her hands, after a few minutes she comes out the batnroom and stand beside me.

"Did you get all of this stuff for Diamond? Who is this for?"10

"Don't start being petty, it's for you." I intertwine our set of fingers together and plant a kiss on her soft sweet lips. She kisses me and slips her tongue in my mouth.

"I miss those kisses." I smirk.

"I miss those kisses." She kisses my lips once again.

"Why haven't we been communicating like we use to, and why do you stay distant?" She ask as she looks into my eyes.

"Because....I just be trying to give you your space. You be walking around here not saying shit to me so I just go out, assuming that you don't wanna be bothered." I shrugged.

"I do wanna be bothered with you your my baby....we haven't had sex in two whole months. Have you been cheating on me, cause I hear that you get lap dances and stuff."

"Nah....I haven't cheated but I do get a dance every now and then."

Her eyes lowers and I lift her chin up. "Aye them hoes dont mean shit to me tho, okay ma?"<sup>28</sup>

"Okay Zayn." She shrugs.

I go over to the bed and grab the long velour box,that was colored a sky blue. I give it to her and she just stares at it.

"What is this?" She ask with a confused look on her face.

I nod my head towards the box. "Open it."

She opens it very slowly and her mouth opens wide as she stares down at it in shocked. "Zayn!" She gasp. "It's so pretty." She gets teary eyed.

She was too amazed to take it out of the box, so I did it. "Let me put it on."

I hook it around her neck, and kiss her in her weak spots. She gazes down at it with a wide smile. "What is the meaning behind it?"

"What do you mean?" I questioned.

"Like....do you have a meaning to go with it. Did you give it to me just cause or does it represent something?"

Shit.29

"It represents the everlasting and unconditional love that I have for you. It represents your magnificence and me giving this to you is just showing that I honor you and most of all I love you." I say straight from the heart.28



"Aww." She coos and wrap her arms around me. "I love you Zayn, I'm tired of all the nonsense....I just want things to go back to the way they were."

"And they will, I promise you that."

\*\*\*\*

I sit in my office and count all of the money that was made from last week, I then hear a soft at knock on my door interrupting me.

"Come in." I say in drowsy tone.

The door opens, and Chanelle enters. I literally stop what I am occupied with just to look at her sexy appearance, I was appalled at the way the baby blue two piece set fit on her, it was lace and also see through, I could definitely see everything.<sup>33</sup>

"I ready-- I'm ready to audition." She fumbles with her words.

"Are you sure, you seem shy." I squint. "Ima call you Shyness.

"I'm-- I'm ready." She smiles.

I nod my head and went into my drawer to grab the Beats Pill speaker, I plug it up to my phone, and try to find a hot club song.

I then play Re Up By Travis Porter.

"You ready Shyness?"

She just stands on the pole and move her body little I could tell that she felt uneasy about this. I paused the song and looked at her. "Listen if you work here, you can't be scared. You only dancing for me, for now. So ima start this over and your gonna show me what you're about alright?"

"Okay I'm ready now. I'm not gonna mess up." She says in a small voice.

"Alright let's see." I play the song, and she begins to grind on the pole in slow motion as she rubs her body, once the beat drops she kneels down and begin twerking, I watched as her juicy ass bounced every where, baby girl had skills I didn't understand why she was so shy.

She got into it, and start riding the beat. The way her ass rumbled everywhere surprised me, she rolled her hips as she stood againts the pole.

She climbs on the pole, doing a spin then slides down doing a full split, blowing me away.

She struts her self over to me as she rubs her full breast and glides her tounge across her upper lip. She bends over in front of me and jiggle her ass. I lick my lips and grab

some of the money on my desk and throw it at her and that motivated her, cause she sits on my lap and grind on my hard member, She rubs my neck, as she strokes her self on me I can feel my self getting stiffer.42

She gets off me and circles around me. She stands behind as she rubs my chest, then she steps in front of me and begin twerk, she was honestly a professional at this.

The song finally goes off and I grin at her.

"Was that good?" She ask in a tiny squeaky voice.

"Yeah.....you got the job." I grab a freshly rolled blunt off of my desk and light it. "I wanna see some more though Shyness."13

She raises her eyebrows. "I wanna make some money tonight." She challenges.

"I got you, c'mere." I gesture for her to back over.3

\*\*\*\*

She's been in my office for the most of the night, we smoke a few blunts that was laced with some good stuff and drunk glasses of champagne.24

"Shit!" I groan as she suck hard on my dick, she moans as she goes. She was literally sucking the the soul out of me, so I stopped her, I picked her up and sat her on my desk, and I start ripping off her lingere.140

I lay her down and she spreads her legs wide open for me, I walk away from her second.

"Daddy where you going?" She whines.2

I go over to my drawer near the door and pull out a condom,

I then place the condom on and walk back over to her. I roughly grab her by her hips and shove my man hood inside of her and begin stroking inside of her fast.57

"Ooohhh shit! Yes, right there!" She yells.

Q/A

Guys I really need you to answer my questions. You don't understand how your opinions help me, I appreciate that you read the book, but please answer the questions cause ur opinions help me with the chapters to come2

So what did you think about this chapter?28

How do you feel about Makiela?24

Im scared to ask the next question....☹️

How do you feel about.....Zayn at this point?87

How do you feel about Chanelle aka Shyness.40

Do you still like the book? Is the drama finally here, and is it good to you?17

If Makiela find out, what do you think she is going to do?28

Do you think the drugs is making Zayn act this way, why is he choosing to do drugs?19

What do you think about Makiela and Zayn's relationship?12

What should Zayn do?13

What should Kiela do?

## Chapter 20- No Free Past+

Zayn

"Pull up right here." Chanelle says with her hands in her pocket as we pull up in front of her crib. I park the car on the curb.

"So what time do you want me to be at work?" She asked as she takes off her seatbelt, I looked at her neck that was covered in the hickey's I gave her.<sup>20</sup>

"Umm.....I don't know. You can come in before 10." I shrug.

"Last night was really good Zayn." She says.

"I know." I nod my head. "You gon get out now?"<sup>1</sup>



"You tryna rush me out?" She playfully roll her eyes.

"I got places to be....go ahead and get out."

She leans over and kiss my cheek, I grab her chin and slip my tounge through her lips and we share a lustful kiss.<sup>79</sup>

"So my stage name is Shyne?"

"Yes your shyness." I respond.

"Bye daddy." She say before getting out of the car, I make sure she gets in safely than I pull off.

After a thirty minute drive I make it home, I enter the house to the smell of bacon, I kick off my shoes and close the door, than I go into the kitchen to see Makiela tickling Aabria as she sits at the table eating her food.

"Mommy stop." She laughs. "Hi!" She waves at me.

"Hi!" I wave back.

I kiss Makiela on the forehead, and she walks away from me and sit at the kitchen table, and tend to her plate that's filled with food.8

"Where my food at?" I asked.7

"Oh well.....its 10am I wasn't too sure when you was going to arrive home so I just made breakfast for the two of us, I didn't wanna waste my time cooking for three." She shrugs.8

"Mom, can I eat in the living room?" Aabria questions.

Before Makiela can answer I do, "Go ahead don't get nothing

on the floor."

Aabria exits the kitchen and I sit next to Makiela, she picks up her phone and go to Netflix, I grab her fork and use it to get a small portion of eggs and put it up to her mouth.<sup>5</sup>

"Hm eat this." I say.

"I will eat it Zayn....leave me alone." She rolls her eyes.

"How much you weigh now?" I asked, I know the she's underweight and the doctor said her pregnancy is high risk, so they want her to be at least 130 pounds by the time she's six months months.

"I'm a 114 pounds Zayn." She huffs, she sets down her phone and I put the fork closer to her mouth and she eats it.

"Are you mad at me?" I poke out lip.<sup>20</sup>

She shakes her head as she chews on her food. "You've been gone for 12 hours and the sun beat you home; why would I be mad?" She says in a sarcastic tone. "Where were you by the way?"

"At the club...." I say truthfully.<sup>2</sup>

"Up until the morning."

"I fell asleep there." I shrug.

"Whatever...you smell like sex." She eyes me up and down.<sup>16</sup>

I suck my teeth. "No I don't."

"Yes you do....you smell like you just got done having sex."

"No I don't." I repeat myself.<sup>9</sup>

"Okay whatever." She rolls her eyes and continue to scan her phone, I rub her belly and begin talking to the twins.

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🚬 🧨 ♂

"Hey boys.....yall growing?" I ask. "Them daddies babies." I kiss her swollen belly, than I kiss her and stand up.16

"Ima go take a shower since I smell like sex."

"Please do." She rolls her eyes, I could feel that she was upset, it seem like she didn't want to be bothered with me all over again.26

After taking a shower, I put on some grey Nike sweats and a plain white t-shirt my hair was growing back and it was time to call my barber. Today I'm going to stay home and spend time with ladies, they need me around more.36

I go downstairs to hear a male voice, I make it to the living room to see Aiyaan sitting on the couch with Aabria as they played on her iPad.

"Wassup bruh." He stands up and take notice at me.

"Nun much." We give each other a brotherly hug.

I walk into the kitchen and he follows me. "I wanted to talk to you about somethin'."

"Somethin like what?" I asked as I grabbed a bottled water out of the fridge.

"You should let me help with you this street shit B." He puts his hands together.

"I ain't got no problem wit that, I need someone to help me run the trap any way. You could start by picking up the shit



from my cousin and cookin' the shit up I guess. I be having so much to do at the club man....I barely be in the streets."13

"I understand."

We talk for a few more minutes, he leaves and my phone begin to rings, I pull it out of my pocket and look at the caller identification and it was Diamond.

"Hello?" I answered.

"Hey Zayn." She greets me.

I lean on the wall and fold my arms. "What's up D, what do you need?"

She pops her jaw. "When are you gonna come back over?"  
She ask.

"Girl Imma a grown ass man, what I look like chilling with you. Ima bring you some money though, you still doing good in school?"<sup>1</sup>

"Well school is out." She laughs. "It's summer vacation."<sup>1</sup>

"Right right....I forgot, you know Bri got summer school so I just assume all kids be at school, well how is work and you ain't slippin just because it's summer right."

"No." She says. "Can you come see me?"

Makiela walks in the kitchen and stand over the sink, starting to wash the dishes.

"I cant come through tonight....but maybe some other time, I have to go tho'."

"Alright bye."

I hang up and set my phone on the table. "You know she's sixteen right?" Makiela ask.

"Why you think me and that lil girl got something going on huh?"

"Zayn...if you really wanted to help her you wouldve let me handle it...she needs a woman to guide her....you shouldn't be at her house chillin with her...its not that im jealous I just know how little girls are these days, they don't want boy thier ages."12

"You jealous let's leave it at that."

"Please get out the kitchen....and leave me alone."9

"If you don't like what I say you can get the fuck out, this is my house girl." I say with bass in my voice.60

"Maybe I will." She turns off the water and exits the kitchen.7

Makiela

"Bri come bring your clothes to me!" I yell at Bri while in in the laundry room. I start off with Zayn clothes, since he hasn't washed his clothes in a while.

I pick up a pair of his jeans and start emptying out the pockets, I then pull out a bag of weed, I put it on the dryer, but then I pick it up to get a closer look at it.1

I see a large of amount of a crystal white substance in it, I continue to go in his pockets and I find a small bag of cocaine. I stop what im doing and go into our room, he was in the bed playing the game, looking very content.

"What is this?" I throw the drugs on the bed and he pauses the game, and look up at me.

"How did you get that?" He sits up.

"I found it in your pocket, now tell me why do you have it."

"It's not mine." He mumbles, I could tell he was lying, I sit next to him and look into his eyes.

"Zay....you don't have to lie to me okay? If it's yours you can tell me."

"Fine it's-- its mine." He says.

"Why are you lacing your own stuff and why are you sniffing, why?" I said on the verge of tears.

"I be depressed, so it helps me forget things and just lay low I guess."13

"Zayn...I need you to go to rehab or something, because your about to be a father in six months...you have to put a end to this now. You can't do drugs, this is not how you escape your pain."

"What Imma do Kiela? Pray? I tried praying, I've been praying but like always God putme in bad situations."1

I start shedding tears, I hold his hand and kiss it. "Don't say that....you are blessed Zayn okay? You have to stop this now before you go too far."

He doesn't respond, instead he continues to play the game, keeping all of his attention on the televison.

"So when Jay said you did drugs, he was telling the truth. You are on drugs."

He snatches the drugs in put them in his pocket. "Get out of here Kiela."

"Okay you want to put drugs over me and your kids, I'll just leave because I can't be stressed like this." I wipe my tears away and go into the closet and begin packing.

"Okay...I'm use to people leaving me. My mama left me, pops left me, every body left so you leaving doesn't phase me because I'm use to it."23

"Zayn.....you don't know how much I love you. But I'm not going watch you harm your self and I'm not going to let my child be expose to this lifestyle....I care for you." I start to cry. "And your just throwing your life away and becoming a whole new person, please do not waste your life and everything you have because of the drugs...please I want you to be happy in life you don't have to do this, you have me Zay....you have a family that you created, let me help you."

I walk back over to him and sit on his lap. "Don't do this okay."

"I did something foul last night." He says.

"What did you do?" I asked.

He rubs his eye, then looks at me with a saddened look. "I fucked one of my dancers."

I cover my face and the tears begin to flow even harder, he tries to pull my hands off of my face, but I held on to tight and begin to sob.

"Kiela? I'm being honest okay?"<sup>16</sup>

"Why would you do that?" I whine.

He holds me close to him. "I'm sorry okay, I was wrong baby. But I promise she is the first and last time, okay?"<sup>11</sup>



"But you told me you love me last night, you even bought me this neck lace.....but then you go out and fuck somebody else, that's not right!"<sup>1</sup>

He kisses me on my neck and remove my hands. "I'm sorry Kiela." He wipes the tears away and kisses my lips. "Look I'm being honest alright....I fucked her."<sup>9</sup>

"I'm done...." I blurt out.<sup>10</sup>

"No your not...baby I'm being honest with you."<sup>9</sup>

"Last night you told me you loved me, you said you honored me and all of that other shit but then you went to go fuck another woman....you weren't being honest last night. And now your on drugs....Zayn I gotta go...and let you get your stuff together."<sup>2</sup>

I stand up but he pulls my arm. "No!"

"Let me go Zayn!"

"You are not leaving me, alright! I was being honest! So what? You wanted me to keep it from you and let someone else tell, nah I did it."

"Just because your honest doesnt mean your faithful! Im suppose to glorify you because you told on yourself, if you wouldn't have done it you wouldn't even have to tell on your self."2

"Your not leaving alright, we gon' work this shit out."

"I'm leaving.....I would stay but I don't wanna be a fool. But ima help you get into rehab and all of that other stuff, but as far as us being together that's done...we're over...well try again when the babies come."2

"You sound crazy!" He yells.

"Zayn I'm doing what's best for me and my babies....I can't be stressing over you....the things that your putting me through

can lead me to losing these children and I don't need that, so I'm leaving....we need a break okay?"<sup>2</sup>

"You not going no where." He says calmly, then he walks over to the dresser and grab my keys he shoves them in my pocket and I can feel self becoming angry.

I go down the stairs and he follows me, I grab my phone from the coffee table and he snatches that out of my hand. "Your not leaving me."

"You really wanna play these childish games, you wanna stress me out?" I try to go in his pocket but he pushes me away.

"We're going to talk this out okay?" He says calmly.

"I will call my brothers to beat your ass don't play with me, give me my stuff now!" I shout.<sup>8</sup>

"Well you ain't got a phone to call him."

I hit him in his face. "Give me my shit!"

"Don't hit me...."

"Give me my shit now!" I try once again to go into his pocket but he pushes me on the couch and walk away.

"Why are you being petty! Your actin' like a little boy " My voice shakes. "I wanna go now!"

He comes back over to me and get on one knee. "I know what I just told you hurt , and I know Ima dog for what I did. But Kiela, I truly love you and I want to be with you....I know I was talking all hard up stairs but I would be lost if you left me, I don't gotta ring or nothin right now, but would you marry me?"73

"No." I shake my head.

"No?" He scrunches his face up. "What you mean you ain't gon marry me."19

"Zayn....I love you, I swear I do, You, Aabria and these kids I'm about to have are my everything. But right now I have to put my children and my self first. I'm not about to marry you right now, especially like this....you are on drugs...you're mentally and emotionally unstable and your not ready cause less than 24 hours ago you slept with another woman. I need a break from you....I need to be able to worry about these kids...but I'm more than happy to get you into rehab and help cure your illness....but as a far as a relationship goes we need a break."

"Fine! You wanna leave!" He throws the keys at me along with my phone, causing it to fall on the floor. "You don't wanna get married? Fine leave!"8

I love Zayn, lord knows I do. But letting him have his way, would be the same old song. I don't want to leave him but

it's what's best, because once he see what he has lost he is going to better his self to get it back.

But I'm still going to be by his side when it comes to the drugs, I'm going to help him because the last thing my children need is an drug addict for a father.

Chanelle.4

I walk into the club, slow grinding music was playing and people were close together dancing and strippers were on the poles dancing slow. I go upstairs, towards Zayn's office but is stopped by a security guard.

"What you doin?" He ask, he was built with a lot weight on him and had long dreads.

"I'm a new dancer, I just wanna to see the owner."

He moves out the way and allows me to knock on the door. He then walks away leaving me by myself, I allow myself into the office and slowly walk in.

Zayn was at his desk with his head faced down. I set my purse down, and shook him a little.

"Zayn?" I whisper in his ear but got no response. "Zayn wake up."

I looked at the tray that had a large amount of cocaine on it and a half smoked blunt was nearby as well.

I felt his back and he seem like he wasn't breathing, I then fell his pulse and he didn't have one.

Chapter 21- 911

Makiela.

I stormed into the hospital, as soon as I got the call from Bishop that Zayn over dosed I rushed out of the bed and left my parents house, just to drive all the way down here.

I make it to the receptionist desk and I catch my breath.

"I'm here to see Zayn Walton, he was brought here a few hours ago." I state.

"Who are you to him?" She questions.

"His girl friend." I clear my throat.

She squints down at the paper she's looking at, then glances back up at me. "His girl friend is actually already in there with him."

"Well I don't know who that woman is, last time I checked me and him lived together...and had two kids on on the way,



can I go see him or not?" I say with sass in my voice.

"I'll take you to his room."

After five minutes we arrive to the room, I thank her and I open the door and enter to see a brown skinned woman, who looked my age sitting beside him. I was appalled to see another woman here, but I stayed calm because I'm here to see if the father of my children is well and alive.

"Who are you?" She stands up and eyeballs me up and down.<sup>1</sup>

"Pardon me." I slightly nudge her out of my way and sit beside his bed and hold his hand tight, he looks so ill, all type of tubes are hooked up to him.

He moves his hand, and open his eyes. "Kiela?" He mumbles.

"Zayn....what did you do to your self?"

"I'm sorry." He says.

"It's okay, were gonna get you back together." I tell him. "I don't understand why your messing with it anyway."

I lean over to the table next to his bed, and grab a napkin to wipe the sweat off of his forehead.

"What did the doctors say."

"Zayn is depressed...so he takes drugs to to cope with his pain, he didn't over doze, what happen was is he basically went unconscious in his sleep." The girl tells me, I tried my best to comprehend that.5

I lean over and kiss his cheek, and I rub his forehead, I hated seeing him like this, now I knew that he needed me more than ever.1

"Are you going to let me help you Zayn? Do you know if his happen again you can actually die and be away from your kids?"

"Yeah baby, im ready for your help."

"You never told me who you were?" I turn to the girl, who gave me a mean mug, I just wanted to beat her ass right then and there for her attitude but I stayed calm.<sup>4</sup>

"I'm Makiela." I stated.

"Your his girl?"

"Yeah....well up until last night when I found out he cheated. Are you the girl he had sex with yesterday night?"

"Zayn?" She calls out, with her hand on her hip.

"What?" He answers her in a scratchy tone.

"Why didn't you tell me you had a girl?"

He didn't give her a response, so I turned to her. "You didn't know he had a girl...and kids on the way?"

"No he didn't tell me that." She says. I couldn't even be mad at her for being here with him or anything.

"How long have you two been talking?" I questioned.

She folds her arms and furrow her eyes. "A day or so....I auditioned for him at his club and he would not let me leave his office, he told me to dance for him and we smoked together and drunk some beer, he got me really high and we ended up having sex."

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt     

I was in total shock, he auditioned plenty of girls and never even had sex with them, what made him just go on and cheat on me. Now that I know he is alive and well, I can leave. "What's your name?" I ask.

"Chanelle." She responds.

"Well Zayn....Chanelle is going to stay here with you. Call me when they release you and we'll start on your rehab."

"Kielaaa." He whines.<sup>28</sup>

"Call me when you get out and I'll help you." I stand in front of Chanelle. "Its was cool meeting you."

"You too." She slightly smiles.

"Makiela?" Zayn calls out for me, I exit his room and after a few minutes I make it back to Tysis car, I jump inside and

stare down at the ground, my heart begin beating fast and the tears starts to fall with out any holding back.10

"What's wrong Kiela? Is he okay?" She ask.

I nod my head yes and rock back and forth. "He's gonna be fine.... Ty--why is this happening?"

"What happen Kiela?"

"I just hate feeling this way. I don't think he loves me. But then again I know his mind is an sick mindset....and I'm torn because I want to be with him and help him through the storm but I don't wanna be hurt while doing it." I begin to sob.11

"Look at me." She pulls up my chin and give me a stern facial expression. "Sometimes you gotta say fuck love and move on with your life....don't cry over that nigga. He cheated on you that's his loss, just know that you gave him



your all and you were on top of your game. Now it's time for you to worry about you and your babies, everything is going to fall into place when the time is right best friend." She wipes my tears away.<sup>1</sup>

"Alright."

1 Month Later

"You and the babies are 100% healthy." The doctor smiles.<sup>1</sup>

"Yay!" Tysis says as she rubs my swollen belly.

"You are a close to being 130 pounds, you are a 126, I'm not too sure how you gained 16 pounds so fast, but I like it. We weren't expecting you to get to our goal so fast. Just keep on eating regularly and taking all of your supplements and your gonna be just fine. Next month you get to see thier gender."

"And I am excited about that." I smile.

"I'll be back with your check out papers." She grins and exits the room.

"So...you think Z gon come with you to your next appointment?" Tysis ask.1

"Yeah...I know you tired of being my baby mama." I joke and put my curly hair up into a ponytail.

"Have yall talked."

"Not really, he calls and talks Bri sometimes...its hard trying to tell her that's not her dad. But he treats her the same...he calls frequently to say goodnight and stuff, and he said he's in rehab getting his self together....he goes to group and they test him make sure there is nothing in his system and he talks about his depression, I sometimes call up there and ask the people how he handles everything."

"You love you some Zayn, not a lot of women still stay in a man's corner like that."6

"I just want what's best for our children. They deserve to have a father and I want what's best for him too."

Chanelle.

"Here baby." I roll Zayn up a blunt the way he like its and he takes it out of my hands and lights it, he then looks back at his phone and laugh at a video of him and his step daughter they were skating together at the park, I roll my eyes.50

I wrap my arms around his neck and slowly plant kisses upon his skin.

"Get off of me man." He shoos me away as he puffs on his blunt. "Damn...always hovering over me, can I breathe?"

"Sorry, I'm just trying to be nice. You're not going to group today right?" I asked in a concerned tone because the program usually have random drug test.

"Nah...why would I go?"

"Good." I kiss his cheek.8

"Do you need someone to talk to baby?"

"Nah im fine Shy, I just need some time alone, you don't mind going home do you? I just need some time to think." He ask nicely.

"I actually do mind going home....always tryna push somebody away and shit." I mumble that last statement under my breath and start cleaning up.

"Watch your mouth." He warns.

"No." I say with an attitude.

"Take your ass home man, when I try to be nice , you start that petty shit." He says annoyed, as he rub his eye. He then pay attention to his phone and begin watching a video of him and Makiela, I get jealous. He is obsessing over her and that little girl 24/7, he doesn't even show me any attention.<sup>7</sup>

"Zayn.....are we in a relationship?"<sup>8</sup>

"Why you asking me this?" He turns back and look at me.

"Because I'm always at your place or your always at mine, we had sex over ten times and were together all the time, so are you mine or what?" I ask.<sup>12</sup>

"You want me to be honest?"<sup>2</sup>

"Will I don't want you to lie to me." I fold my arms and stand

in front of him.

"No...your not my girl and I'm not your man....im just spending most of time with you because I like your company and the sex is good as fuck, to be real I'm trying to better my self for my unborn kids and Makiela, that's why I'm always pushing you away, I don't wanna be with you nor do I see future between us ." Hearing those words completely broke my heart, I was catching feelings for Zayn, I had a little crush on him from the first time I saw him, and that literally made me angry.

"I doubt she'll ever want your ass back, but whatever. You might as well be with me, I'm the only one taking care of your ass ." I say as I'm clearing off his table.

"But I didn't ask you to....your the one always clinging to me and shit."1

"I saved your life! If I didn't find you in that office your bitch ass would've been dead." I push him by his head. "So you

need to be thanking with me."

He removes the blunt from his mouth and give me a stern look. "Don't hit me, because I would hit yo' ass back, so don't play with me Chanelle."

I shake my head and snicker, "You ain't gonna do shit to me, so just be quiet."

"Bitch get out my house because I'm tired of always talking to your ass...get out I don't need you to babysit me hoe."

I run up to him and hit him once again. "Yes the fuck you do! Because you do stupid shit when your by your self." I push him by his head once more. "And who you callin a hoe? the only nigga I fuck with is you.... dumb ass."2

He surprisingly grab my wrist and grip on to it tight. "Listen, don't fucking put your hands on me, cause I would beat yo' ass okay? Stop fucking wit me and go home."

I jab him in the side of face. "I hit you now what? I d--"  
Before I can finish my sentence he rises up and back hands  
me and he hit me directly in my and face few times.<sup>39</sup>

"If you can't fight me, then don't put your hands on me!  
Cause that's what your gonna get, now get your shit and get  
out!" He screams from the top of his lungs.

"I hate you!" I stand up and go upstairs to his room to grab  
my stuff

After a few minutes, I hear his foot steps press againts the  
staircase. He comes into the room and stare me down,

"I don't feel bad for you, you shouldn't be acting like a crazy  
bitch."<sup>7</sup>

Zayn.

I walk into the bathroom and stand in front of the sink so I  
can cool my self down an hour ago I had to bust Shyness in



her face because she was tripping. I turn on both of the water knobs and splash water onto my face then grab a towel from its holder and dry off.

I hated my self for getting so low in life and allowing myself to follow into my parents foot steps when it came to the drugs and I also hated that I cheated on my woman.

The main thing on my mind, is getting things back to the way they were. I know I can't allow this shit to ruin me, I need Kiela back.

"Zay! Where you at coz?" I hear Bishop's voice echoing through out my house, I exit the bathroom and go downstairs, to see him standing in my living room.

"Wassup?"

"You need to pack up your shit...cause you goin to rehab in the morning."7

"Nah im already an out patient ." I tell him.

"Nope you got kids coming in a few months, so we need to get this shit fully out of your system."13

"Man....I don't wanna sit up in there. Keila put me in outpatient rehab...im cool with that. I go to my lil anger management on Wenesdays and Fridays so I'm coo."

"Nah yo' ass need to be in there and supervised. So I got you all set up, you gon stay at Promises. It real cool, it's near the the beach, it's real soothing.....they got therapist there. They treat you to dinner every night, they even drive you around....you gon be good. You staying in there for 98 days..they gon get you together."

"98 days...who gon take over the club for 98 days, who gon supervise the trap for 98 days, who gon take care of my house for 98 days huh?"

"I got everything's covered for you, I actually talked to Kiela

about all of this, and she recommended Promises Rehabilitation, cause she already know that that out patient shit aint gon work for you, cause you'll still have access to what you want. She really wants you to get better dog, and I want you to get better too. You can't hold on to this shit, you gotta let go and improve."

"Kiela set this all up?" My mood lightens.

"Yeah she called yesterday and told me her plan."

"She could've called me,"

"How she suppose to hold a conversation with you if you always high off the dust coz?" He asked.<sup>3</sup>

I sit down on the couch and reach over to the ashtray that's on the coffee table and grab a fresh rolled blunt. "Alright ima go to rehab, but I need to fuck with this one last time."

I light the blunt and toss the lighter back on the table, and I reach down in my pocket and pull out a small zip lock bag of coke.<sup>1</sup>

I inhale the smoke and it soothes my soul. Something about it always helped my pain go away. I then turn to my right to see Bishop sitting beside me, staring at me. I didn't even see him sit down.

"Wassup?" I ask. "Why you just staring."

"You really wanna be like ya moms and go out like ya pop did Z?"

"What you talking about?" I ask confuse.

"Bro....you use to hate when yo' mama locked her self in the room and did this shit, and ya pop put coke before you, you gonna go down the same route and allow your kids to go through the same feeling?".

"I said ima go to rehab B, damn why you trippin'?" I lift up my shoulders and knit my eyebrows together.

"If you was really serious, you wouldve said 'fuck this, ima throw the coke and shit away and get ready for a new start.' But what you doing now tells me that you ain't ready to stop."6

"Why do you do this shit?" He ask.

"It helps me forget and help calm my nerves at times." I respond.

He sits back and give me his undivided attention. "What does it help you forget Z?"

I stay still and tight-lipped, I wasn't ready to open up about the strain that has been held againts me.

"Tell me man." He rushes.

"It helps me forget most of childhood, you know I got an obsession with the past, like every day I think about the same events....every day I go back to when Shane use to touch me and it makes me sick to my stomach." I close my eyes and say it with passion.

"And then I see myself killing my baby sister every single day, every time I see Bri I see my sister so...I'll just think back on what I did and everyday a piece of my soul just leave my body because of that, I do this shit because it takes away the heart ache and pain bruh." I explain to him, hoping that he could fully understand.<sup>5</sup>

"I use to think that same shit too...but then Jaymee had my baby girl, and when I looked into her eyes all the shit I was feeling went away....you bouta have you first borns man....I swear when they get laid in your arms your gonna think differently about the things and have a brand new perspective, Zayn man.....you can't hold on to the past, I know it can't be changed or forgotten...." He says.

"But it could be accepted. Accept the fact that you was molested and remember that you got through it....and it made you stronger...you know you the only nigga I know that got molested but didn't let the shit turn you out. You be fucking all the bitches...." He chuckles as he playfully slaps me upside my head and I share the laugh with him.

"Accept the fact that your moms...basically neglected you your whole life and realize that you did a better job by raising your self anyway....you taught your self a lot of things man...and last but not least accept the fact that mistakes happen nigga.....Leyana knows it wasn't intentional, I know it wasn't intentional. Stop letting this shit break you, let go of the past and pick up your future....give your girl some space....let her breathe but when them kids come, start over with her and cherish her, cause lil shawty gon be down for you, she loves you man. And you know I always got you."18

I nod my head. "Thanks bruh.....im done with this shit, I'm serious....its time for me to get my shit together and man up

,I'm ready."

"You ready?" He grins in a good manner.

"I'm ready." I put out the blunt and toss the bag of coke to him.

3 Weeks Later.

"Chanelle quit callin me a'ight?" I say through the phone as I sit in my new room.

"No where the fuck is you at nigga, we have to talk....and do you know that you broke my fucking nose."9

"Nooo....I didn't. Quit lyin."

I hear her noisey background and that just make me more annoyed. "You need to come to my crib, we need to talk



some shit out."7

"We ain't got nothin to talk about ma, look ima block your number cause you being petty so peace." I hang up and immediately put her contact on block.

"Your girl bro?" My roommate Luke ask as he comes from out of the bathroom, he's a cool lil white dude. I've been in rehab for three weeks, it's kind of hard not being able to do what I want to do and have curfew, but for the most part im enjoying it.

"Nah man just a lil chick I use to mess with, how was your day with your dad bro? Y'all went to go see the Giants?" I asked referring to the baseball game he went to go see today.

"Yeah bro...the game was pretty good, Giants won like usual."1

I nod my head as I pick a piece of lint from off my shirt.  
"That's Wassup."

Ms.Lisa, one of the psychiatrist here; stands in the doorway. "Hey guys."

"Hey." We greet her unison.

"Zayn you have some visitors my love."

"Oh word?" I ask in a gleeful tone, I then stand up and follow her out the door, we make it to the lobby and I see Makiela and Aabria standing near the door, joy settled inside of my soul when I saw them.

"Daddy!" Aabria runs up to me and jump into my arms.

"Hey baby girl." I hold her tight as she holds on to my neck.

"I missed you sooo much! I haven't seen you in a long time."  
She says.

"I know I missed you too." I say as I side hug Makiela and she slightly smiles at me.

"I want us to live in our house together and be a family again...I don't like it at grandma's." She says, hearing that put a hole into my heart.

"I know little one." I rub her back.

Aabria gets down and walks back over to Makiela. "Look what we got you." She grabs the footlocker bag sitting on the couch and hands it to me.

"Aww....what is this girls?" I lighten my voice, causing them to laugh a little. I pull the Jordans box out of the bag and open it, revealed to me was the new Retro 7's.

The shoes were colored white along with metallic gold and a splash of red and blue.<sup>12</sup>

"Mommy bought them but I picked them out."

"Y'all are so nice...how y'all know I wanted these. Thankyou."  
I kiss Aabria on her forehead and force Makiela into a hug even though she didn't want one.

"Congratulations on reaching step three, I'm proud of you."  
Makiela says referring to the 12 step system.

"Thank you, I'm trying to get myself together. I feel much better."

"Have you been talking to the therapist here?" She ask in a concern tone.

"Yeah...um a pastor comes amd talk to me every Sunday as well and B comes and check up on me."

"What about your mom? Has she came, I called her and

notified her about your situation. " She says, I called my mom and ask her to come visit me, but she makes too excuses.

"Nah she hasn't...."

"Well we just came to drop by and show our faces...and see how you wer--"

"Daddy you wanna go swimming with me, mommy and Tysis?!" Aabria blurts, cutting Makiela off.

"Nah im okay baby." I say.

"Well why you don't wanna come?" Her voice lightens and she furrow her eyebrows.

I look at Makiela and poke out my lip."I don't think mommy wants me to come."

Makiela rolls her eyes and scratches her eyebrow. "You can come Zayn." She gives in.

Aabria screeches in excitement and hugs me tight, I was truly excited to spend time with them because I haven't saw them for over an month, that's a long time to me.

Makiela

Tysis and I sit on the beach chairs and conversate tuning everyone at the water park out, we also watch as Zayn and Aabria have a splash fight in the pool. We were at in indoor water park, that had a few food courts inside as well, it was real nice.<sup>2</sup>

"They really love each other." Tysis says smiling. "It's hard to find a man who accept your kids."

Not really. I thought to myself.<sup>10</sup>

"Yep that's her Daddy Zayn."

"What made you bring him?" She ask.

"Because I know he needs to communicate with the people he knows, he gets lonely being in that center....he doesn't really have any one but Bishop. And we haven't saw him for a little over a month so I want to show him that Aabria and I still loves him no matter what, but I'm enjoying my little break from him, and I can see major progress, he's getting his self together. He's not all cranky and shit....he's turning back to his original self and I'm liking it." I explain, as I rub my belly.

"So your considering starting over at some point?" She gives me a goofy grin.

"Nah not now...im just focusing on me and Aabria, and these babies that's about to come. I'm not about to rush

anything."3

"Smart." She nods. "So tell me what's up with your brother?"

"Who Aiyaan?" I flex my hand as I giggle.

"Yes bitch...he is fine as hell."

"Mm...you ain't touching my brother." I joke,2

Zayn gets out of the pool and looks at Aabria "Do not swim pass 4 feet, you hear me?!"

"Yeah!" She smiles.

He then approaches me and sit at the end of my chair, and place his hand over my swollen belly. "Can you buy me something to eat from that Subway?" He ask.



"Your not suppose to eat then get in the pool." I bite my lip.

"Come on I'm hungry." He whines.

"Let's go..." I roll my eyes and stand up, he grabs a towel and put it around his neck.<sup>1</sup>

"Ty, can you please keep an eye on Bri." I ask.<sup>1</sup>

"Yeah girl I got you." She says as she scans her phone, then put her head phones into her ears.<sup>27</sup>

As Zayn and I is walking down the hall to get to the Subway, a man stares at me in a lustful way and Zayn covers me with a towel.<sup>2</sup>

"What are you doin?" I ask.

"I don't want nobody staring at yo' fine ass while you got this little ass bikini on." He says making a reference towards my simple yellow two piece.

"Where's that little thing you had on with it?" He ask.

"I don't wanna wear it, I don't even look that bad. My belly is just poking out that's all."

"You don't look bad, you look sexy as hell and I don't want niggas staring at my baby mama."2

I laugh it off. "Whatever Z."

We grab his food, and make it back to the pool. The first person I try to spot my eyes om is Aabria but I didn't see her.

"Ty, where is Bri?" Zayn ask.

"Um...somewhere in that pool." She was so into her phone, that I knew she wasn't paying any attention.<sup>30</sup>

I rush over to the pool and did not see my child any where, all I seen was a whole bunch of other children along with adults in the water.

"Aabria?!" I call out. I walk to the pool and Zayn follows me, I go all the way down to furthest foot, and as a child moves away I can see a little body at the bottom of the pool.<sup>10</sup>

"Move! Move!" I yell as I push people out of the way, I literally dive into the water pregnant and all , and I hold my breath as I swim all the to way baby and lift her up. I come above the water and a weight is taking from upon my arms as she's taking away from me.<sup>2</sup>

I panic as Zayn lays her on his lap, her eyes were shut and

she was apparently unconscious, adults came rushing up to us and I heard numerous of voices calling for a life guard.

"My baby!" I yell as Zayn tries to do CPR on her and try to pump on her chest to get the water out, she wasn't breathing and I begin to scream from the top of my lungs this was so surreal.<sup>16</sup>

"Someone call 911! Get a life guard do something please!" I scream.

Zayn please get the camera out of my face." Makiela says as she lays in the hospital bed looking weary and tired, her eyes were blood shot red and her curly hair was all over her head. I aimed the camera at her, capturing her each and every move. I just got done cutting the umbilical cord so I was geeked.+

Our babies crying together, was music to my ears. The doctors were handling them, doing the normal procedure they do after birth. Today is January 18th, Makiela had a

natural birth, and stayed in labor for literally 21 hours, I knew she was stressed out and probably didn't want any more kids after this. Baby boy was 6 pounds while baby girl was 5, and the girl came out first.<sup>15</sup>

"Shut up and smile at the camera, this a special moment, Are you happy that you got our two bowling balls out?"

"Yes." She says as she wipes the sweat off her forehead with the back of her hand. The doctor along with the nurse walks over to her and gently give her our new borns one at a time.

I come closer and aim the camera at them, they were beautiful, I knew I was going to cherish them forever.

"Aww they are sooooo precious.....Hi babies, hey." Makiela coos at them with tears forming in her eyes.

After she gets done breast feeding them, I get the chance to hold them both while she drifts on to sleep. I rock back and

forth, as I stare down at thier faces, Zaibree Aliya Walton, was laying on my right sleeping peacefully, while Zayn Jr was wide awake, his lids were squinted and he yawns as he balls up his little fist.5

"Hey lil Zeejay..." I whisper to him, he was good looking like his pops, he inherited my eyes, along with my narrow nose and full lips. It felt good to have a son and baby girl, I knew that rehab was worth it, I would give up everything and anything just for them.8

I gently kiss my son on his forehead and continue to talk to him and my daughter so they can get use to my voice more.

2 Days Later.

I use the key to unlock the door to our home, while Makiela waits inside the car with the twins, I then make it back outside and open Makiela's door and assist her out of the vehicle, since her body has been aching.

We both open the doors to the back seat, she grabs Zayn Juniors car seat as I grab Zaibree, we grab thier diaper bags and follow each other in the house.

She breast feeds them, and I give Zeejay a soft sponge bath as she gives Zaibree one, we use a special type a soap that the hospital gave us, since thier skin is still sensitive. I dress Zeejay into a full onesie that's colored black with red letters, that says "I love boobs.....just like my dad." and I place a thin hat on his head, to keep him warm.<sup>30</sup>

"Uh uh...." Makiela giggles. "Who got him that onesie?" She asks as she clothes Zaibree.

"Your pops bought it....he bought some more outfits for them too."

"Is that washed? You know you have to wash baby clothes...even if it's brandnew."

"Kiela...." I slightly frown. "I got this."

She grins at me. "Okay I'm just tryna help, these our your first borns, your a newbie."

"Say mama please." I say as I look down at Zeejay, I glance over at Zaibree and Makiela dressed her in a white onesie that has gold writing, Aabria Loves Me.2

"She's gonna love that." I say.

"I know." She lays Zaibree down in her bassinet gently and I do the same for Zeejay.

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K



31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt     

I put the intercom on, so we can be able to keep an close eye on them no matter where we are in the house and we both exit the room.

"Well I guess I'll be back later." I tell Makiela as I grab my car keys, yes Kiela and I have children but we still haven't worked anything out, I tried to make it happen again but she's too stubborn and act as if she doesn't want to be bothered with me sometimes.

She raises her eyebrow. "Your about to leave?"

"Yeah...don't you want some time alone?"

She wraps her arms around my neck and grin."I didn't say anything like that....Its been six months and you finished rehab and stayed off of drugs and you seem to be the sweet ole Zayn again...so...I guess I can give you a second chance."9

"For real?" I questioned with joy in my tone.

"Yeah but I have some new rules, I don't want you at the club and in the streets all the time. Your a father now...so we need to be parents and tend to these kids together."

"I already had that made up in my mind. I was gonna let your brother handle the club for me for a little while, I think I make enough to stop trapping, because at the club I make atleast 30 to 50,000 dollars a month but with trapping that adds on atleast six thousand. But i wanna be more of a family man, I just wanna make sure we're stable."

"We're stable trust me....the way you and Bishop rich asses got shit set up...were stable enough. I just want us to get back together and avoid bickering and I really just want you to be faithful...because when you cheated that made me feel like I wasn't good enough." She vents.

"You are good enough, I was just being a knuckle head, not really being considerate of your feelings, I'm sorry." I allow my lips to land on hers and we share a passionate kiss.

She ends the kiss and smiles at me. "Your birthday is in a week ....what do you want me to get you?" She questions me.

"You already gave me my gift baby...my kids are probably the best I ever received." We look into each other eyes and she slightly smiles before kissing me once more.

Chanelle.

I stand in the dressing room positioned in front of the mirror fixing my hair a little before I go out and entertain. I recently just got a hair cut, leaving the length at my collar bone. I grab my parting comb and make a side part and add a little bit more edge control to my edges, and sleek them down with a brush

I then see the door open in the reflection of the mirror and Kandie enters, she holds a grin as she walks over to me and lean on the counter.

"What are you laughing about now bitch?" I ask as I put my brush back into my purse and pull out my Lipglass by Mac.

"Your baby daddy is here?"

"Tim?" I asked as I apply the the indigo purple lip gloss on my lips.<sup>34</sup>

"Nah Zayn." She says.

"For real?" I bite on my lip as I slowly close the lip gloss, she raises her eyebrows and nods her head.

"Well let me go see him." I rub my lips together and strut my way out of the room. I haven't saw Zayn in months, I knew where he's been but I decided to give him time and space, and surprise him about the news. He hasn't been at the club, his cousin had to come in and take over, lord knows I missed him.<sup>4</sup>

I arrive in front of his door, I softly knock on it and wait for an answer.

"Come in." He says.

I turn the knob and enter, his back was facing me as he stood in front of the file drawers, scanning a paper.

"Hello Mr.Walton." I say in a soft voice.

He turns around, and holds a bit of an shocking expression. He takes a deep breath and stares me down. "Shyness....I am so glad to see you baby girl."9

"You are daddy?" I blush.

"Yes...because I am transferring you to B's club so me and you don't ever have to converse. I heard you didn't make a name here for your self anyway, but at Bishop's club you'll have a fresh start."27

He says, I fold my arms and strongly mug him. "Seriously? Why are you acting like this?"

"Why are you acting like this....look your fired. You start at Bishops places next week, you and Daniela?"

"Can I ask you question?" I ask as I rub my lips together.

He shrugs as he sits down at his desk. "Wassup?"

"Y-you never liked me."2

"Nah.....that was just the coke fuckin me up."

"Oh well it fucked you up really bad, because I'm pregnant with your baby."

He rest his hand on his cheek, and cock his neck to the side while furrowing his eyes. "I did not get you pregnant....I made sure I wrapped it up each and every time, so it can't be mine. How many months are you, because your not even showin' ma."



"I'm four months pregnant and I poked holes in all of the rubbers."6

He scrunch up his face as if he tasted something sour.  
"Bitch why would you do that shit?! You childish as fuck dawg! That's not my baby."

"It is!" I walk up to his desk and lean over to stare him in his face. "You thought you was gonna fuck me and quit it, but nope I'm having your baby."

"You're a little ass girl, what kind of woman are you to be a proud hoe who trapped a nigga."

"I'm pregnant with your baby....and if you keep denying me ima put your ass on my child support."

I turn on my heels and strom out of his office. I felt relieved.21

Makiela.

"Be careful now, support her head." I assist Aabria as she holds her baby sister Zaibree, she was so excited to have two new siblings that she didn't know what to do.<sup>3</sup>

I was in the middle of breast feeding Zayn Jr; these children wake up at different times, that's the reason why Zaibree is full off of milk.

"Mom me and Zaibree look a like." Aabria says.

I pull my breast out of Zayn's mouth and put him over my shoulder to burp him . "Yeah you all look alike."

I embrace my three children, I was happy to have them in my life.

Zayn enters the room and place his car keys on the dresser.

"Hi daddy." Aabria smiles.

"Hey baby, I bought you some Wendy's it's down stairs on the table. Go eat it before the frosty melt."2

"Thank you." She smiles.

He sits on the bed with us and grabs Zaibree, and Aabria gets out of the bed and exits the room.

"I got something to tell you." He looks at me, with a saddened look.

"What?" I questioned.

"Well....I went to the club last night just see how everything was going and Chanelle came up to my office and she told me she was pregnant."7

I nod my head and remain calm. "So you've still been having sex with her?"

"No baby....I've been done with her months ago. But when we did have sex I made sure I wrapped it up each and every time....but now she confessed that she poked holes in all my rubbers, she talkin bout she four months pregnant."5

Zeejay finally burps I rub his back and stare back at Zayn with a dull expression. "Why is she now just telling you this, I'm sure word got around that you were in rehab, why didn't she come visit and tell you face to face?"

"I don't know man....I'm just mad. Cause I ain't trying to have a baby with someone I don't even like....the funny part is that she isn't showing, and she's about to be five months."

"She's probably not even pregnant....she just tryna trap you. How about you call her and ask her can you go to her next appointment with her and if she says no or something, keep questioning her about the pregnancy.....cause its not like

she couldn't get in contact with you and all of that time Bishop was running the club for you, so why didn't she try to get to you through him, something about it seems fishy and most females don't admit to poking holes in condoms....I feel like she's lying but if she's not it's whatever, baby probably not even yours."

"Are you gonna leave me again if she is?" He ask as he looks down at Zaibree .1

"No." The reason why I say no, is because Zayn has been progressing and I see how hard he's been working to get his family together, I'm not going to let one woman ruin anything again.26

"You made a good point babe....I think she's lying too." He says.

\*\*\*\*

I get the twins to sleep, so the house is now serene and quiet. Zayn and Aabria are out grocery shopping and he said he was gonna pick up Bishop so he can see the babies. I sit on the couch and turn on the television to BET, reruns of Martin were playing.<sup>3</sup>

"I'm hungry." I say out loud, and grab my phone from the side table and begin to text Zayn to tell him what I want, but while doing so the door bell rings.

I stand up and straighten out my plain burgundy shirt, then approach the door. I look through the peep hole to see Aiyaan and someone behind him.

Once I open the door, I see him and Jayson.<sup>8</sup>

"Wassup sis." He says and they both enter.

"Why did you bring him to my house Aiyaan?" I ask as he closes the door.

He looks me up down and rub his hands together along with licking his lips, if I didn't know any better I would say he was checking me out. "He told me yall had history, he working for me now...I just came too see ya man, where he at?"<sup>4</sup>

"He'll be home in a minute, and he is gonna snap if he sees him here." I nod at Jay.

"Chill out ma." He says, "Ima go see my niece and nephew, yall chat it out." He then walks away leaving Jayson and I alone.<sup>4</sup>

"Can you go wait out in the car or something....I don't want Zayn to trip." I say to him.

He slowly walks over to me and give me a warm smile. "Nah I wanna talk to you, where my daughter at?"

"She's with her father." I say boldly as I fold my arms across my chest.<sup>10</sup>

He grins. "So you really thought I was lying when I told her he did drugs and shit?" He changes the subject.

"Can you go wait out in the car please." I ignore his question, as I push my glasses up more.

"Makiela I've really been wanting to talk to you so just let me finish. You know I've been growing as a man and I've been really thinking on the past."

"Oh really?" I lift up my left eyebrow and motion my mouth to the side.

"Yeah...I noticed that I hurt you. I was fourteen okay? You were the first girl I ever had sex with, the reason behind why I was dissing you and avoiding you in the halls is because I had other girls that already gave it up to me so I wasn't hung up on just you anymore, and I feel like after we fucked you were to clingy and expected too much of me, you



really wanted me to be your boyfriend and I wasn--"1

I cut his sentence short. "Jayson....you were my first kiss and my first time....I did expect you to be there, I did expect you to be my boyfriend....like I didn't understand how could take something so valuable away from me and say that you love me and say that you wanted me to have your child in the future and right after the day is over with you act like the shit that we did never happen...." I caught myself shedding tears.

"And then you left me alone with a baby, and that hurt even more because I had her by myself....I raised her on my own and as she got older she didn't understand why daddy didn't love her. For five whole years you made me feel like I wasn't good enough to be show off or to even have child with you, I thought that I didn't reach your standards.... was in love with you...and the sad part about it is that I didn't even know why...it wasn't the sex that made me fall in love either....you said you loved me....and I believed it, so from that day on I had something in my heart for only you, I even turned down other guys cause I believed that one day you

would realize what you were missing out on something good and would come back. But you just used me so you can tell your boys that you hit it, so you could be proud of being a four teen year old fuck up."

He gently touches both of my arms and in front of me as he looks into my eyes. "And i'm sorry for that a'ight? I know I can't really make things right with you, but it's never to late to reconsole with my daughter, I been absent for five years and I realized that I wanna be the one in her life...I'm not playing games no more, I broke my baby girls heart and I want to fix it back up."

"I don't know...cause I keep on giving you chances but you rui--." Before I could say anything, Aiyaan foot steps presses againts the stair case as he comes down the steps and enter the room.

"He back yet?" He ask as he open the curtain to look out the window. "Yop, he pulling up now. He got a new Benz?" He ask as he turns and looks at me.2

"Yeah." I turn to Jay. "Brace your self for an ass whopping."8

After a few minutes the door opens, and Aabria comes in first with a small plastic bag in her hand. "Uncle Aiyaan!" She throws the bag on the couch and jumps into Aiyaans arms, she didn't even see her father standing near the door way.

"Wassup baby girl, your daddy came to see you." He says as he turns around, showing her Jayson. She frowns and slides out of his arms, she stare at Jayson for a mintue and flys up the stairs,17

Then Zayn comes into the house with groceries in each hand, Bishop was right behind him, they both greet Aiyaan in a friendly manner but when they see Jayson their faces transform into strong mugs and all hell breaks loose.

Zayn literally throws the bags down and grip Jayson by his collar holding him up againts the wall "Didn't I tell you that I was gonna murk yo' ass on sight!" He shouts from the top of

his lungs. Bishop glares at Jayson from head to bottom, as his chest rise up and down from him breathing heavily, he was heated and his fist were balled up tight.<sup>12</sup>

"Zayn and Bishop please calm down." I say in a low tone.

"Man get yo feign head ass up off of me nigga." Jayson says angrily.

"Aye nigga!" Aiyaan jumps. "Look he working for me! I bought him over here!"

"He workin' for you?! You see Zee, I told you not to fuck with this mark ass nigga!" Bishop shouts.<sup>1</sup>

Jayson catches Zayn off guard by striking him in the face with his fist, the two of them then begin throwing blows at each other, and Bishop jumps in and they began to kick and stomp Jayson out.<sup>12</sup>

"Y'all stop!" I try to break it up, but thier fist and feet were being thrown left to right, so if I didn't want to get hit, it would've been wise for me to get out of the way.

"Why are you just standing there lookin stupid!" I yell at Aiyaan. "You not gon help me stop this shit!"

"It ain't got nothin to do with me." He says.<sup>27</sup>

Bishop then pulls out a gun as he stands over Jayson who's laying on the floor, frightened for his life.

"B-b-Bishop quit it alright?" My voice trembles. "D-dont do that."

Zayn face lowers as he looks back at me, the look he gave me was cold. "Shut up Makiela, he killed his little brother and ain't no stopping it."

"Bishop killing him is not gonna bring Lil Mikey back." I say as my voice begin to crack and shake, yes Jayson was a dead beat father and he probably did some bad things but I didn't want any act of violence to happen upon him.<sup>16</sup>

"Nah this is his karma." Bishop says as he gives Jay the coldest glare, leaving Jay shaken, he cocks the gun back and Jay twitches in fear and looks over at me; his eyes were pleading for help.

"Let karma play out and deliver it self to him on it's own....sometimes you think karma is your friend but one day it may back flash on you." I voice, hoping that what I say might end his senseless act.1

"Man.....I told you I ain't kill your brother, I found him like that." Jay says with tears swelling up in his eyes.

"That's not what the camera's shown in the house though." Bishop says.

Zayn looks at the consternation written on my face, he knew that this was wrong; He turns to his cousin and hold on to his shoulder. "Don't do this man, it ain't worth it."

Bishop give him an evil glare as he corners his eyes, then he turns his head to Zayn with the gun still aimed at Jay."Zee.....since we was little niggas I stood up for you, I ain't let a nigga fuck wit you and get away with it because you was my fam. Any nigga who touch you had to pay, After you killed Shane and ya sis, I stayed by your side cause you was my fam, and I knew you needed me in your corner. I made sure that I had niggas who was in the pin to protect you....I had your back even when I wasn't able to be there. Anytime you needed me for protection, money, or even love or conversation I dropped everything cause you was my fam. You know how much family mean to me.....I loved Mikey just like I love you, I don't let family get fucked over man....someone gon pay. I ain't sayin you owe me or anything, but do you understand me fam?"10

Zayn nods his head. "I understand coz."

"Give me the confirmation to pull to trigger back then."1

"Pull it." Zayn says carelessly.<sup>12</sup>

I shake my head in disbelief as tears form in my eyes.

"Man come on...." Jayson whines.

With out another word being said, Bishop pulled the trigger, shooting a bullet right between Jayson's eyes and causing a loud bang, we all then hear a loud scream, and look over to see Aabria on the stair case with her hands over her ears.<sup>22</sup>

"You killed him!" She panics.<sup>22</sup>

Aiyaan tries to comfort her but she continues to yell, it broke me to know that my daughter just watched someone get murdered in her own home. But not just someone, her biological father.

"Why did yall do that." I begin to cry, Jayson was far from a good father. But we had history...that's someone I knew and use to adore. I understood he killed Lil Mikey but it didn't have to go down like this. I guess this is just how things pan



out and I have to deal with it.19

I walk over to Aabria as shes stretched out on the floor kicking and screaming. I pick her up and carry her up the stairs.

💋💋 Question and Answer. 💋💋

Please answer all of these questions including ghost readers. These are what I look at the most cause they help me plan out future chapters, your opinions matter to me, I want to relate author to reader. 💋💋💋💋

Aabria.+

"Uncle Aiyaan!" I throw the bag in my hand on the couch and jump into Uncle Aiyaan's arms.2

"Wassup baby girl, your daddy came to see you." He says as he tunrs me around, showing me my real daddy. I didn't

want to say hi to him, because he lied on Zayn and mommy always tells me not to be friends with liars.

I look at him and slide out of Uncle's hands and begin to run up stairs.

After five minutes I stay in my brother's and sisters room and watch over them as they sleep. I then start to hear a lot of noise, it sound as if some things were falling, soon after that I heard my real daddy pleading.

I walk out of thier room and slowly start walking down the stairs, and I hear Uncle Bishop talking to Zayn, as I reach down the last step, I hear a loud bang that makes my heart jump and cause me to cover my ears because they were popping.

I open my eyes wide and scream from the top of my lungs as I see blood pouring from my daddy's head and Uncle Bishop standing over him with a gun. Uncle Aiyaan tries to grab me but I back away.<sup>1</sup>

"You killed him!" I yell, as I fall to ground and begin sobbing. I didn't know that Uncle Bishop was a killer, he's always been nice to me; why would he shoot my daddy? He wasn't a good daddy but he was still a person, why did he have to die? We didn't even get to make up.<sup>19</sup>

My mommy, picks me up as she cries as well and carry me up the stairs.

Zayn.

I watch as Bishop and Aiyann put a large garbage bag over Jayson's head and the lower part of his body, then they begin to carry him out the house.

Makiela hides her face in her shirt as she cries while coming downstairs ; she stares down at the puddle of the blood on the floor she was literally having a panic attack.<sup>2</sup>

"Baby...." I say as I walk over to her.

"No no, get away from me." She stretches her hand out in front of me as she backs away. I pull her arm a little roughly and force her into a hug.

"Listen it's gonna be alright okay?" I assure to her.

She catches me off guard as she harshly slaps my face.  
"Are you fucking stupid?! Why would you kill her daddy in front of her, why would you do it period, I told you he wasn't worth it!" She screams.<sup>7</sup>

I grab her tightly by both of her arms and look into her eyes.  
"Look alright, he killed my cousin! Killed him, that was his karma! I didn't say shit when you pushed Tysis off of that damn balcony, so why are you all on my case?!"

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt     

"I didn't push Tysis, I didn't intentionally try to kill her. Jayson is my child's father....he wasn't a good father but one day once she got older they could've had a connection, but you and your dumb ass cousin ruined it!" She shouts.28

I lift up her chin and force her to look at me. "Bishop always looked out for me alright? So it ain't no way I'm not gonna look out for him. I'm sorry Kiela, but that nigga killed my cousin....its on video. Bishop gave Lil Mikey a duffle bag filled with twelve grand and Jay robbed him for it and killed him the same day...baby I'm sorry okay...that nigga wasn't a good father no way."

"Zayn....I tri--I tried to give you a chance but this isn't gonna work. You have scarred my child. Yall are selfish.....you chose the streets over your family."36

"But Bishop is my family too." I get in defense mode.3

"I'm done Zayn." She says as she wipes her tears away and start walking up the steps.1

I snatch her phone and car keys off the coffee table and storm out of the house. I wasn't going to let her leave me again, I can admit that the choice I made was inconsiderate and should've never even come about.<sup>5</sup>

But everything Bishop said was true, he did protect me, he did look out for me. I respect Makiela's wishes but B always had my back, and in my mind it was only right to have his as well.<sup>3</sup>

Jay knew not to be at my house anyway, he set his self up, I guess that still doesnt justify my actions, but he basically set him self up to get murk; why would he even come? It was still wrong to let everything go down where my family lays thier heads,<sup>21</sup>

Once the night falls I go back home, I walk inside and the first place I go is into the twins room, they were still in thier bassinets asleep.

I walk pass Makiela and I room and see her and Aabria in



the bed sleeping together. I go back down stairs and sit on the couch to release some of the stress off of mind.

After a few minutes I start to drift off to sleep, until I feel a soft tap on my knee discontinuing the process, I open my eyes to see Aabria standing in front of me with tears falling down from her eyes. It was weird because I didn't hear her come down the steps.

"Hey baby girl, come here." I sit her on my lap and she lays her head on my chest.

"Wh-why, did Uncle Bishop kill my dad?" She ask in a soft tone.

I was at a lost for words, but I know that I owe her an explanation. "Well your daddy killed Bishop's younger brother Lil Mikey.....so Bishop killed him for doing that."

"Why didn't he j-just call the police?" She ask as she looks

up at me with glistened eyes.

"Well..because when someone hurts your family you have to get them back and punish them on your own, that's how I was brought up. If a bully hit your brother or sister wouldn't you stand up for them and beat that bully up."

"Yes." She nods her head.

"Well Bishop was standing up for his little brother. Your dad killed him so Bishop got him back, that's why you don't do negative things....cause they'll come back to you." I tell her, hoping that she could understand.<sup>2</sup>

She starts to shed more tears as she looks down at the carpet, I kiss her forehead but she wipes the kiss off. "I think you should tell the police what Uncle Bishop did, because sometimes it's good just to walk away and let God handle it, that's what mommy and granny tells me." She speaks.

"So I should tell on Bishop."

"Yeah."

"How about I just don't bring him around here around anymore?" She questions.

"How about you just tell the police that he killed my daddy, when somebody kills someone your suppose to tell the police. I have a police officer name Mr. Clint at my school, I can tell him. " She says in a whining tone.<sup>24</sup>

"No no no, don't tell anyone at school what happen, don't tell your teachers, dont tell your friends...tell no one. If you tell a grown up at school than they'll take you and your brother and sister away from me and mommy." I tell her, hoping that she was listening closely. Because the last thing I need was protective services getting into our buisness.

She sits up more and wipe her tears away. "Well...can you tell the police your self?" She ask.

"Yeah baby." I give in.

She climbs off of me.

"I love you." I tell her.

"I love you too." She says in a low tone as she drags her self upstairs.

\*\*\*\*

I wake up to hearing babies crying, so I go upstairs to go help Makiela, once I get to thier room, I see her changing Zeejay's diaper on the changing table, so I get Zaibree out of her bassinet and start taking care of her. Makiela huffed, and didn't even attempt to say a word to me.

After changing Zaibree, I pick her up and stand in front of Makiela, as she picked our son up from the changing table, she starts to walk away but I grab her arm.

"Makiela?" I call out.

"What Zayn?" I looked into her eyes, they were puffy and slightly red, I could tell she's been crying.

"I'm sorry....I don't want you to leave me again okay. What Bishop and I did was wrong on so many levels, we should've never let that happen in front of yall. But Jay wasn't faultless baby and you know this. He never helped you with your child , he never even loved you, and he was out stealing my money and he killed my cousin, I know that doesn't mean kill him but you have to understand Bishop's pain; you have to understand his point of view, that was his only brother...its not like he did it with out a reason. You know how good Bishop's heart is, he ain't gon kill a nigga with out a legitimate reason . And if I would've said no, he would've still done it anyway and then he would've thought I didn't have his back."16

She scratches her nose and take a deep breath. "I think my feelings are still attached to Jay. Maybe that's why I'm so hurt."57

"Baby....you have to let go of what he put you through and how he made you feel. You can't keep over analyzing over that situation. I promise if you and Bri can find it in your heart to forgive me, I'll be 10x the man he ever was to y'all. I just need my family."

"I don't know how Aabria is gonna feel being around you, she's traumatized."3

I rub Zaibree's back as she sucks on the burp towel on my shoulder. "I talked to her and she's not mad at me she just wants me to turn Bishop in."

"Well are you going to do it?" She ask me.12

I stand in my own silence for a second and I meditate on my next statement. "What do you think I should do... honestly?"<sup>16</sup>

"Well...if that's what she wants I think you should do it but you can easily go down for it too, cause you gave him the "confirmation" " She air quotes.<sup>35</sup>

"Are you gonna leave me?" She ask.<sup>2</sup>

"Your putting me and your children in danger, that's what it seems like. And than you went againts my word, months ago I told you to leave him alone it wasn't worth it and then you let your cousin shoot a gun in our home and kill Aabria's father in front of her. "

"Your not in danger, ain't nobody coming after me and even if they were Ima keep you and my kids protected. I'm not the one Bri is mad at, she saw Bishop do it and she didn't hear me tell him to do it....all she know is Bishop is the bad guy, cause he had the gun."

"Zayn I love you....but I can't. It just wouldn't be right."7

I kiss her forehead. "Please see me and my cousin through alright.....we all have done our dirt if Bri would've died that day after Tysis let her drown, you would've killed Ty ....Bishop killed Jay for killing his one and only brother. It's only karma, don't let a nigga who once led you into depression and self hate, ruin your love life because he got his self caught up into some shit, okay? That nigga knew that is what was nothin' but trouble waiting for him at this house, You're upset that he died, I understand that. But you have to realize that it was a reason behind why we did it."23

"Excuse me." She says as she walks out of the door.

On my part I had a lot of reasons why I did, one of them was because he made my girls cry so many times, if he was good father and took care of his daughter I wouldn't have no choice but to respect him.



He didn't only kill Mikey, but he broke Kiela's and Bri's heart. I don't like that.

Makiela.

After feeding the twins, I placed them in both of thier swings and sat them in front of the television and put on some educational cartoons. I was very upset that Bishop killed Jay, I don't believe in violence; Zayn has a point though, it was his karma and Bishop is a sweet heart, he wouldn't hurt no one unless they deserve it.<sup>12</sup>

But killing him in front of my daughter was a no no. She has to deal with that image being in her head for the rest of her life, Aabria actually cared for Jay even though he wasn't in her life, I remember how she use to beg me to call him and beg to see him, she really just yearned for his love and attention.<sup>18</sup>

And I was hoping that one day he would come correct and be a father, cause she deserved to have a bond with him.<sup>10</sup>

As I'm sitting on the couch, she comes down the stairs with her blanket, she sits next to me and lay her head on my shoulder with out saying a word.

"You okay Bri?" I ask her.

She nods her head yes and rub her nose as she looks at the television.

"Are you sure?" I ask as I stroke her hair.

She nods again.

"Talk to me, how do you feel?"

"Well.....im upset that Uncle Bishop killed my dad."

"And you should be." I tell her. "Are you mad at Zayn?"<sup>6</sup>

"No...I love Zayn. I just don't love violence." She says in a soft tone as she looks up at me.

"Are you gonna miss your daddy?" I questioned.<sup>1</sup>

She shakes her head no. "Noooo I'm not gonna miss him because he never loved me...but I do feel bad for him. Him and Uncle Bishop shouldn't have been violent with each other.....shooting someone is bad." I smile at the fact that she said violet instead of violent.<sup>11</sup>

"Daddy shot Zayn's little cousin, Mikey, remember him."

"I know what daddy did....but Uncle Bishop shoulda never shot him, cause it's not right. He shoulda let God handle him." She says, in I totally agree with her.<sup>15</sup>

"True....so you want Uncle Bishop to go to jail?"9

She nods her head yes and I fold my lips. "Are you okay with us still being here with Zayn? Or do you wanna move out, because if you don't like him no more we're moving....I don't want you to be scared or uncomfortable."9

"No no no mommy, I don't wanna move out! I love Zayn so much and I still love Uncle Bishop, I just don't love violence....God says were all brother's and sisters, it's not good to kill each other; Uncle Bishop has to go jail for killing, because shooting someone is wrong."2

I nod my head in understanding, I want to drop some street knowledge on her, but I'm not sure if it's smart idea. "Okay baby. So you sure you wanna stay here with Zay."15

"Yeah....I love Zayn, he's so nice. But he has to stop being violet is not good." She says.1

2 Weeks Later.

I slowly walk up the stairs with a breakfast meal on a plate, backed up by a tray. I enter Zayn and I's bedroom and set the meal on the night stand. Zayn was in the bed sound asleep, so I gently shake him so he could wake up.

"Zee wake up." I bend down and whisper in his ear.

"Move girl." He groans as he rolls over.

"But it's your birthday." I pout. "I got something for you."

He sits up and yawns as he rub his eyes, than he smiles at me in a sarcastic manner.

"Happy 27th Birthday baby." I say in a sweet voice with a smile as I pick up the tray and lay it on his lap.<sup>4</sup>

He looks down at the plate, that was a dream breakfast. I made him vanilla waffles with vanilla ice cream and

sprinkles along with chocolate syrup, turkey bacon and sausages, with an steak and cheese omlette, I also prepared him a breakfast cocktail pink lemonade with a shot of green goose vodka and strawberry on the side.3

"Does this have poison in it?" He ask as he lowers his eyes.8

"Zayn come on now..eat it." I frown.

He hesitates but then uses his fork and knife to cut off a nice sized piece of the waffles, he grabs some of the eggs to and stuff the substance in his mouth.

He chews slowly and after he swallows it he starts to speak . "It's pretty good...thank you little wifey." He leans over and pucker his lips and I give him a big juicy kiss.

"I love you." He tells me.

"I love you too." I kiss him once more and it turns into a passionate tounge kiss.

"Daddy...." We hear a small voice and turn around to see Aabria standing in the door way with her head hung low and hands behind her back. For the last two weeks she has been in her own little shell, she's hasn't really spoken, haven't been in the mood to eat or even go to practice, and it saddened my child to see her like this.<sup>2</sup>

"Hey Bri."

She walks over to us and pull a drawing from behind her back. "Happy Birthday." She says.

Zayn looks at the drawing and hold a smile across his face, I lean over and glance at the drawing for myself, and its him and her holding hands, it was very colorful as well.<sup>6</sup>

"I couldn't buy you anything, cause I don't have any money."<sup>3</sup>

He sets his meal to the side and pick her up, sitting her on his lap. "You don't have to buy me anything baby, you being here makes me so happy." He tells her as he tickles her a little but she doesn't laugh.<sup>10</sup>

"How are you doing this morning beautiful?" He ask her.

"Just thinking."

"Just thinking." He mocks her. "Thinking about what?"

"My real dad....is Bishop in jail yet?" She turns back to him leaving him on a speechless mode.<sup>2</sup>

"No, Bishop is actually in the Bahamas with his girl friend and daughter." He tells her, which was the truth. "He had to get a lot of things off his mind."



"Aww his daughter is gonna miss him when he goes to jail."104

Him and I share a look at each other and he shakes his head.

"Yeah. Eat some of this food with me because I know your hungry." He passes her the plate and they start sharing the breakfast, I stand up and grab my phone from the night stand and snap a quick pic of them.

"Y'all so cute." I smile.

"Daddy can you take me to the daddy daughter dance?" He ask her.

"Where at school?" He questions back as he reach over and grab a napkin from the tray and wipe his mouth.

"No it's involves her skating...thier having a daddy daughter dance downtown in a few weeks, and yall gon be dancing on ice." I tell him.

"Yeah baby I'll take you."

"Can you buy me a pretty dress."

"Yes, daddy is going to buy you a pretty dress, a tiara, flowers and candy, it's gonna be a great dance for us."

Her mood then lightens up, she jumps up and wrap her arms around his neck and kiss his cheek. "I love you."

"I love you too."

After two hours, I have already fed the twins and dressed them both into these cutes onesies, they were black, Zaibree's says I was born first and Zeejay's says She likes to

brag, with an arrow facing to the left.6

They are too cute, they are two weeks old and adorable, thier pigmentation finally came in, Zaibree is brown skinned like Zayn but looks more like me and she has a head full of curly hair.

Zayn Jr, is a warm hershey chocolate complexion, like me but looks exactly like Zayn, the twins aren't identical, but of course they still look alike. I put them inboth of thier swings and place a pacifier in each of thier mouth.

Today I wanted to take Zayn out on a date, maybe go out to eat or sight seeing I don't know, but I was gonna call my brother Malik's girl friend, Erica and see if she was up to watching Aabria and the twins.2

As Zayn is walking down stairs, I can smell the pleasuring fragrant of his Tom Ford body wash lingering through out the house, I loved the smell of it.

He makes it down stairs with a shirt in his hand, he wore a pair of True Religion's and the waist band of his Ralph Lauren boxers were showing, his curly hair was growing out more and more, it was starting to be long just like the first time we met, I take the time admire his well built body, his muscles were so big.

If he just got a few tattoos....I thought to myself as I'm enjoying the sight of his body. Zayn has no tattoos at all, I guess he missed out since he was in prison the last year's of his teenage life.<sup>2</sup>

I have tattoos, I have a trail of hearts on my side and 'Kiela on my wrist.

"How about we get tatted today?" I suggest.

I watch as he puts his shirt over his head and scrunch up his eyebrows. "Nah..im straight."

"Come on stop being lame, I want to get all the kids tatted on me, and you should get you a few tattoos."

"All at once?" He raises his eyebrow.

"Yeah birthday boy." I smile.

"Alright then....we can do it."

A knock then presses againts our front door, I sit on the couch and he looks through the peep hole.

"It's my mom." He smiles.

He opens the door and I look at her and the person behind her as they have a whole bunch of bags in thier hands.

"Wassup ma." He hugs her.

"Hey birthday boy!" She hugs him back and give him a big kiss on the cheek, he seem glad to see her, this was the happiest I ever seen him.

She and her male friend set all of the bags they had in the center of our floor.

"How was Atlanta?" He questions her.

She waves it off. "Me and your Auntie Carmen got into it, but this is my new man his name is Dex, say hi to him." She demands. The man looked young, maybe in his late 20s or early 30s, he wears a nike jogging suit, with some jewelry.<sup>11</sup>

And he has a few tattoos on his neck and hands.

"Wassup man." Him and Zayn greet each other by giving one another a brotherly hug.

"Dex this is my one and only son....Zaynnie poo." She kisses his cheek and Zayn smiles. I could've puked in my mouth, I smelled mooching and dishonesty in the atmosphere.11

"What's all this stuff?" He ask while looking at the bags.

"All of this is for you and my new grand babies, where are they."

He points over to where the twins and I our, she grins and walks into the living room, she covers her mouth as she looks down at the twins.

"Oh my god....they are so precious, look at Grannies babies." She coos. "Hey Taquila." She comes over to me and stretch her arms out for a hug, I stand up and give her one out of respect.24

"Hey Angel...its Makiela."

"Oh is that what it is?" She ask. "My grand babies are so adorable" She taps my arm "Go get me a burp towel and some hand sanatizer so I can hold them."

I do as I'm told and after while she is on the couch holding them, they seemed comfortable with her. I sit on the other couch with Zayn and he wraps his arm around me as her boyfriend try to spark up conversation with Zee, but he wasn't as talkative.

"Keila, what made you want to have a baby with Zayn?"  
Angel ask, catching me off guard.<sup>9</sup>

"Nothing made me wanted to have his baby.....i actually wanted to wait until we were married but one night we had unprotected sex and then came an unplanned pregnancy." I say truthfully.

"Mhm...I was thinking about having more kids. Dex and I have been talking about it."<sup>2</sup>



"Ma how old are you and Dex, and how long yall been together?" Zayn questions as he leans over to get a good look at her. Zayn's mother was far from old looking, she had a nice little thick shape, long curly hair that was down to her back and she was a natural beauty, I know Zayn gets his looks from her.<sup>1</sup>

"I am 44 years old and Dex is 28, I still get periods and he's still young so where gonna try to have us a baby." She smirks at her man and he leans back in the chair and rubs his chin.<sup>67</sup>

Zayn rolls his eyes and shakes his head. "But how long have yall been together?"

"We've been together for three months Zayn, stop trippin alright?"

He takes a deep breath and wrap his arm around me again.

"Alright?"<sup>1</sup>

After a few minutes the twins fall asleep so I put them in their bassinets, Zayn, Angel and Dex share a blunt as they stand outside and chat.

I come outside and wrap my arms around his waist.

"Baby....I made us reservations for dinner at five, then were gonna get our tats ateight, Malik's girl is gonna watch the kids for us."

"Uh uh." Angel chimes in. "Those are my grand babies and I wanna babysit them."<sup>41</sup>

"I already called a baby sitter an--"

"Well call that same baby sitter back and tell her that they Nana got them."

"Angie we're fine we don't need y--"

She gives me a death glare and cock her head to the side.  
"Little girl....im not playin with you. I am gonna watch my grand babies."7

I fake a smile and walk into the house. She was really beginning to agitating me, because I don't like her and I feel like all she is doing is mooching off of Zayn.

Zayn follows behind me as I go into the kitchen. "What's wrong baby? Mama can't watch the kids,"

"Zayn I don't feel comfortable with her taking care of them. I don't even know her like that." I say as I lean on island and fold my arms.

"Baby that's thier grandmother....she can build a bond with Bri too."1

"I'll rather have Erica watch them." I say.

He shakes his head. "I don't feel comfortable with Erica watching them because I don't know her, give my mom a chance alright...I know yall keep on bumping heads but she loves kids."19

"How? She didn't love you!" My words slip between my lips before I could catch them, he give me a stern look and I give in.36

"Fine....she can watch them."

I grab the house phone off of the table and storm out of the kitchen and go upstairs to Aabria's room, I open the door and see her laying on the bed playing a game on her Ipad.

"Hey sweet pea." I sit next to her and she holds a straight face.

"Hi mommy."

"Me and Daddy are gonna go out and his mom Ms. Angel is going to watch you."

"I thought Erica was watching us." She says with sadness in her tone.

I shake my head and run my fingers through my hair.

"No...she's not. But I want you to be good and just stay to your self, im gonna make you some food before I go and if you needa call me just press #1 on the phone okay?" I ask.

"Okay mommy."

\*\*\*\*

"So you got any ideas for a tat?" I ask as Zayn and I ride in the car.

"Yeah....I wanna get my kids tatted on me and I want your name."

I give him a surprised look. "Really? You would rock my name on you?"

"Yep. But you gotta do one thing?"

"What?" I asked.

"You gotta get my name tatted on your titty and you gotta get Daddy Zayn on your ass too. But a female gotta do that for you....don't want no other nigga giving you tattoo on your ass and titty."

"Well get tattoo of my name on your dick then, so next time yo' ass decide to cheat, bitches can see my name."

"Girl...." He rolls his eyes. "Im not gonna cheat any more so

you don't have nothin to worry about?"2

"You promise daddy Zayn?

"I promise wifey."

I lean over and give him a quick kiss.

Diamond.

"Come on stop!" I yell as my pimp pins me down to the bed.

"Nah you wanna talk all that shit, than take this!" He shoves a hard object that was not a penis inside of me and I scream out of agony.

"Stop it! Let me go now! Your-- you hurting me!" I scream from the top of lungs.

He then lay on top of me and enters his self on top of me, I then look up at the night stand and see a sharp screw driver, I quickly grab it and stab him in his neck multiple times.

"You wanna talk all that shit then take this!" I pull the screw driver out of his neck and I'm covered in his blood, I push him off me and dig in his pockets for a phone.

I find his cell, and quickly dial Zayn's number.<sup>2</sup>

"Hello?" A female answers.

"Can I speak to Zayn." I ask frantically.

"He's sleeping right now, who is this?" She ask.

"Its um--" I sniffle. "It's Diamond, I've just been raped and im I did something terrible so I need him to come get me."



"Okay Diamond, this is Makiela...tell me where you are and I'll come get you, are you in a safe place."1

"No I'm not.... I need Zayn."

Diamond and I walk to my front door, it is 3am in the morning, the sky is still midnight black and it's uncomfortably chilly outside, I use the key to unlock the door and she follows me inside of the house.1

I turn on the light switch and it lights up the whole entire living room.

"Diamond are you hungry? We have some left overs or sandwiches....if you want." I ask as I take off my light jacket and throw it on the couch.

"Nah, I'm alright." She says, "Dang yall house is humongous..." She walks around and looks at the school pictures of Aabria.

"Thank you, follow me up stairs so I can show you the guest room." I say as I begin to walk up the staircase and she trails behind me.

Once we arrive to the room, I open the door and turn on the light switch. This room was the smallest room in the house, it has a twin size bed, and a walk in closet, the walls are painted white with red designs."Okay...the sheets and stuff are clean....we didn't put a television in here but in the morning if you wanna go downstairs and watch tv you can...I'll get some clothes for you so you can take a shower and get relaxed."

"Thanks." She says as she sits on the bed and kicks off her flip flops.

"Hey..." I sit beside her while facing her. "You really need to get your self together....the things that your getting your self into may just get you really hurt one day."4

"I know ima quit." She nods her head in understanding.8

"I wanna help you, because I know you need guidance more than ever right now. So I'm thinking that we enroll you in school, get you in some therapy and activities...so you can be like a normal teenage girl." I suggest.1

She swallows hard and slowly bows her head. "I can stay here with y'all for awhile?"22

"Yes...but you need to get a good job, go to school and stay off the streets. You need to learn how to carry your self as a woman and learn how it is to be independent....you have to get your act together."3

"I understand....thank you for helping."4

"Alright....im gonna go back to bed, I have class in the morning." I take a deep breath as I rise off of the bed. "Ima bring you some pajamas and if you wanna take a shower we have fresh towels in the hallway closet.

"Okay Kiela....thanks again." She smiles.

After ten minutes, I check on the twins and finally get settled into bed, Zayn's big old self uses my breast as a personal pillow and I can feel his breath blowing againsts my chest.

"Zayn get off of me, your head is heavy." I whine.1

He didn't hear me because he was still asleep, I roll my eyes and rub my big baby's head as he snores loudly, his phone then start vibrating like crazy, I reach over to the night stand and grab it, only to see a text from Chanelle.

I roll my eyes and put in his code 11816, the twins birthday. I then look through his message thread that he has with her. It looks like she's a total pest and Zayn ignores her, because she text him non stop but he doesn't give her a reply unless it's concerns the so called baby.1

Yesterday 8pm

Chanelle- Zayn can you come over? I need you?

When's your next doctors appointment?

Chanelle- I'll find out...but wyd?

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt     

3 mins ago

Chanelle- Come over....stop playing. I really want you to come.

I smile at myself and decide to call her. I press the call button and wait for her to answer. After a few seconds she does.<sup>1</sup>

"Hey." She answers.

"Hey Chanelle, it's Makiela. I wanted to inform you that Zayn and I our back together and we have three children and were happy....he's mine so you can stop texting him after hours."

"Oh I know y'all together. But did you know that I'm pregnant with his baby and he will also have a family with me."

"Yeah I heard that your supposedly pregnant. When you contact my man it should only involve your child...stop hitting my man up off of some bull shit..if he wanted you he woulda stayed with you the first time."<sup>7</sup>



"Bi--!"

Before she can even respond I hang up and set his phone back on the night stand.

"Yes tell her to leave me alone." Zayn mumbles.<sup>46</sup>

I smack my lips and gently slap his head. "Go back to sleep and you better keep ignoring that bitch....if she ain't talking bout no baby keep that bitch on read."<sup>1</sup>

"Okay mama." He says causing me to smile.<sup>1</sup>

Zayn

I stand in the kitchen with Zaibree in my arms as I fix her a bottle, she lays her head on my shoulder and starts to whine a little. I bounce her up and down a little to hush her up.

"Okay Zaibree baby, daddy's almost done."

After putting the formula in the bottle, I stir it up and seal it with the lid, I then dab it on my hand to make sure the temperature is not too hot.

Once I see that it's just right for her, I go in the living room where Aabria is, right in front of the tv watching Sesame Street.

"Bri what I tell you about sitting so close to the TV, come sit on the couch, your gonna go blind one day if you sit that close." I tell her.<sup>6</sup>

She sucks on her teeth and sit beside me on the couch. "I can't see it from here though."<sup>3</sup>

"You can't see it?" I ask her, it was surprising to me because we have a wide televisor with great quality. I then

remember that she has a light brain injury from drowning, her doctor did say she may have trouble seeing.

"Can you see the board at school?" I question as I sit back and place the bottle in Zaibree's mouth, and she start drinking on it rapidly.

"No...I can't see that well."

I nod my head and look down at Zaibree. "Alright, I'll tell your mama to make you an eye appointment, maybe you need glasses."2

I then look at her face, when I see her mugging straight ahead, I turn to my left to see Diamond coming into the room. I was shocked to see her in her my home.5

"D what are you doing here? H-how did you ev--."

Makiela then comes down the stairs with Zeejay in her arms. "I brought her here, she's staying with us." She then goes into the kitchen, I look at Diamond as she holds a wide smile on her face.

"Here baby feed your sister while I go talk to mommy." I tell Aabria as I lay Zaibree in her hands carefully, and I put her burp towel under the bottle to secure it.<sup>1</sup>

I then walk pass Diamond as she sits on the couch and go into the kitchen, where Kiela is making Zeejay a bottle.

"Why is she here?" I ask.<sup>2</sup>

"Well last night she called your phone, she was raped by her pimp and she called you wanting you to come get her, you were sleep so I rushed to Compton and picked her up....she really needs some guidance."<sup>1</sup>

"Look I helped this little girl the best way i could, when they

kicked her out of the hotel I had a social worker find her a place to stay....she keeps messing up." I tell her as I lean on the counter.

She rolls her eyes and nods. "Zayn she needs a woman to influence her the right now. Her mother in prison and her father is dead, one thing that that girl really need is a family."18

"Okay baby....I just know how she is. I've been dealing with her for a year."

"Lets just try it out, I'm gonna find her a home soon."

"Alright man." I huff. I didn't have a problem with Diamond, it's just clear to see that she doesn't want help, even Makiela pointed that out to me, now she's changing it up.

"My mommy is bouta come pick up the kids, I gotta be at school at one and how about you get out the house today."

"And we're just gonna leave Diamond here by her self? Where she gon go, can your mama baby sit her too, she's not grown."6

Kiela smacks her lips and nods her head as she shakes up Zeejay's bottle. "You know that's not a bad idea, my mom is going to the church today anyway....I'll send her with her."8

"Feed him....I gotta go run me a bath and iron my clothes." She gives me Zeejay along with giving me his bottle.

I carry my big dude into the living, Diamond was sitting in my original spot so I sat in the chair a few feet away and begin feeding him.

"Is she my cousin?" Aabria ask me.

Diamond smiles at her and bites on her lip. "No ima friend of Zayn's."

"Oh that's nice.....Zayn is my dad."

"I know." She smirks.

I look up at her as she still smiles, this little girl is creepy.7

"Can I hold her?" She reaches for Zaibree who is in Aabria's arms.

"She doesn't like strangers....but sure." Aabria says.  
Diamond then takes Zaibree and begin rocking her.5

Aabria stands up and start flying up the stairs.

"All gone Zee." I tell Zeejay as I pull the bottle from out of his mouth and lay him on my shoulder and begin to burp him.

"I want a baby someday...they are so cute." Diamond says.7

"You need to focus on bettering your self before you focus on having kids."5

She slightly rolls her eyes as she fakes a smile. "I wasn't talking about now Zayn...in the future."

"Oh okay." I shrug.

"How have you been?" She ask, as she rubs Zaibree's back softly.

"Good Diamond."

After an half an hour, Kelly, Makeila's mother arrives at our home, she holds Zaibree as Aabria finish packing some of her things.

"Zayn Walton?" She calls out, as I'm in the living room



changing Zeejay's diaper.

"Yes Mrs.Randall."

She walks in the room and position her self in front of me, making me feel somewhat nervous. "When are you going to marry my daughter? Because you too our officially serious." She says.<sup>4</sup>

"I was thinking about doing it either this year or next year, we have a lot of stuff to handle before we just jump into marriage, we both need to work on things."

"Well don't have my daughter waiting until these kids are in elementary school." She says as he rubs Zaibree's back.

I nod my head in understanding. "Yes ma'am...you think you can do us a small favor?"

"And what will that be?"

"We took in a 16 year old girl last night, she's staying with us and stuff....And I don't feel comfortable leaving her alone so I was wondering if she could tag a long with you and the kids and maybe you can take her to one of your bible sessions and she can help." I suggest, I place Zeejay on my lap and he drools on my finger.

She looks at me and twist her mouth to the side. "She can tag a long I don't care."

"Diamond!" I call for her. After a few seconds I hear her coming down the stairs, she then stands in front of me wearing a a black pair of leggings, and a simple long sleeve crop top that has a heart across it. Her natural curly hair was pinned up into a bun.

"What?" She shrugs.

"This is Makiela's mother, Mrs.Randall, your gonna be going with her today."

"Im cool where I'm at....my friend suppose to be picking me up so we can go hang and get tatted."14

Kelly shakes her head and furrow her eyebrows. "Oh no honey....as far I heard your only sixteen so you will not be getting tatted."6

"You ain't my mama though, so you can't tell me what I can and can not do."12

I chime in as I raise my finger up. "Actually Diamond, if you want to stay here and be apart of this family you have to act like a child....children don't stay at home by them selves and they don't get tattoos."4

"Um sixteen year olds do." She folds her arms. " I don't see why you being petty."3

Kelly lays her hand on Diamonds shoulder. "Honey just come with me, your gonna have fun and meet some girls who's your age and everything. If you drop the attitude I'll take to the mall and let you get anything your want."9

"For real?" Diamond raises her eyebrow.2

"Yeah." Mrs. Randall says.

Diamond shrugs and holds a smirk on her face. "Okay then." She goes upstairs.1

After awhile the kids are home leaving Makiela and I alone for the first time in a month. I walk upstairs to our bed room to see her facing our mirror, doing her make up infront of our dresser. Her medium length curly hair was in a messy bun and she wore a towel around her body.1

I looked at her ass and the back of her thighs, that was

getting thick as hell. Ever since she had the twins, she has been big in all the right places, weighing a 131 pounds. I loved this new big girl I was seeing.<sup>9</sup>

"You still getting ready ,who you putting make up on for?You only taking yo' ass to school."<sup>3</sup>

She turns to me with her make up brush in her hand. "Damn I can't look cute?"

I walk up behind her and grab on her ass roughly. "You getting smart with me?"

"Maybe." She says as she adds on her highlight.

"Who you getting cute for?" I ask as I slap her ass causing her to stop and glance back at me giving me a stern look.

"No one Zayn....I just like make up. You know that."

"Oh." I say as I lick and bite on her sensitive spot, and go under the towel to rub her clitoris, her pussy was nice and wet, for some reason no matter of the time or day, she's always wet....always. And I like that.

I stick my finger in her hole and start finger fucking her slowly and she tilts her head back. "Please do not start anything."

"Shut up...and take it." I say as I suck on her neck and fuck her faster.<sup>3</sup>

"Shit." She hisses. "Come on stop...I gotta go in a minute baby." She moans.

"It's only 11:10." I grab her and push her on the bed she bites on her lip as she scoots her self up more and gets comfortable, I spread her legs apart and allow my tongue to attack her clit, she immediately begins to moan and hiss.

"Zayn!" She screams.

I suck on her pearl, and look up at her as she breathes uncontrollably along with her eyes rolling in the back of her head. I use my tongue to fuck her hole and she screams. I then enter two fingers inside of her and suck again.

She pushes my head close to her and bites on her lip.

"Yes daddy! Don't stop, right there daddy...keep going!"

I stop on purpose, just to see her get upset and beg for more. I stand up and yawn.

"What are you doing, I said don't stop." She says with sass in her tone.

I laugh at her. "You just told me to stop cause you gotta get

to class."

She smiles as she rolls her eyes, she then sits up and get down on her knees, I watch as she pulls my hard member out of my basket ball shorts.

She starts jacking my dick as she looks up at me with a seductive look. "Have I ever told you that you have the biggest dick in the world daddy?"

"You don't need to tell me, I already know." I breathe heavily as I rub my hand across my head.<sup>4</sup>

"You cocky as hell." She then places the tip in her mouth and sucks it all. I grip her hair and push it further down her throat only to hear her choke.

"Damn..." I sigh, me rubbing againts her tonsils was the best feeling in the world. Her vocals vibrates againts my hard man and I let out a long groan.



She release my dick from the opening of her mouth and begins to hums on my balls.

"Who the fuck taught you this shit?"<sup>22</sup>

She stops and smile. "What? I'm just being freaky.....isn't this what you like."

I was pleased by the head she performed on me, and I'm proud that she ain't scared to freak her man. I go over to our dresser, and grab a condom out of a small basket then I walk back over to her after putting it on.

She gets on the bed and position her self on all fours, but I lay down and gesture for her to come and do all the work.

"But daddy I want you to do our favorite thing." She whines  
"Uh uh come here." I demand.

She crawls over to me and I grab her leg and assist as she climbs on my dick backwards, she begins to bounce up and down while moaning.2

"Oh fuck! Mmm my gosh!"

As I'm on the bottom, I roughly pound myself into her and pat her pussy with my hand and begin to rub her clit as I stroke. I bite on her neck and she reaches back and rub my cheek.

"Tell me you love me." She says.

"I love you baby." I whisper in her ear.

After five minutes I make her cum all over my shaft and she gets up then lay besides me. She reaches over to the night stand to grab her phone and huffs.

"I'm late." She says and I chuckles, as she rushes out of the bed.

"I gotta take another shower now messing around with you."

"You know you wanted this dick, stop fronting." I say as she walks into our bathroom.2

"I hate you....you got me late." She says as she turns on the shower.

"You better be quiet before I give you some more." I grin and she rolls her eyes at me then closes the bathroom door.

\*\*\*

I pull up to Chanelle's crib, only to check on her. She is carrying my child so I have to be there for her, I drag myself

to her door and gently knock on it, waiting for an answer.

She opens the door wearing nothing but some Hello Kitty pajamas and rollers in her hair.

"Hey....I seen you finally came." She says as she allows me to come in and close the door. Then she sits at her table and look through her phone.

"I just came to check on you." I tell her.

"When is your next doctor appointment?" I say as I look at her figure, that didn't look like the body if a pregnant woman.

"I don't know...I have to see. Why?"

"I just wanna come with you and make sure my baby is nice and healthy."

"Your baby is healthy."

"Where the ultrasounds at?" I ask and I watch as she tenses up.<sup>2</sup>

"I don't have them baby." She says. "I lost them."<sup>13</sup>

"How did you lose the first picture of our baby?"

"I just don't got it Zayn. I lost it." She says once more.

I sit across from her at the table and lick my lips. "So your like five months now right?"<sup>3</sup>

She looks down at the table, avoiding eye contact and nod her head. "No only four in half."

"When is the baby due?" I ask.

She looks at the ceiling and squint her eyes.

"March....April.." She mumbles under her breath

"August."

"August what?" I ask as I fold my lips

She glares at me and roll her eyes. I can tell that this topic was irritating her, just by her uncomfortable body language.

"I don't remember Zayn."1

"Come here." I gesture for her to come to me and once she get closer I pull her arm gently and begin rubbing on her belly. I pull up her shirt only to see a little pudge.

"You don't look 4 in a half months, are you really pregnant?"  
I question her.

"Yes I'm pregnant Zayn." She says in a irritated tone.

"Well why don't you look it, If your not pregnant, you need to be honest with me now." I lean back in the chair and stare up at her.

"I am pregnant...just not with your baby....anymore."

I stand up, now alert and eager to hear answers. "What you mean anymore."

"I got an abortion."14

I grab her by her wrist roughly, and push her againts the wall causing a big thud to be heard, I pinned her back againts the wall, and she looks into my eyes with fear

"You did what?"

"I got an abortion...im pregnant but not with your baby." She sniffles as she stares down at the ground.

I cup her face and bang her againsts the wall, making her.  
"Why the fuck would you abort my baby bitch?!"<sup>18</sup>

"Zayn let me go!"

"Why did you abort my child?!" I shout in her face.

"Because I didn't want to ruin what you had with your girl and I know that if I have child they deserve to have a mother and father, a family."<sup>1</sup>

"The baby deserved to live too.....if you know that you aborted my baby why you still playing a long like you carrying it."<sup>4</sup>



She sheds tears and look into my eyes. "Honestly I wanna be with you....but I know you don't wanna be with me....so yeah I aborted your baby. And I found me a new man, that I can build a family with."

I shrug and release her from my grip. "Less baby mama drama for me."8

I walk away and go to the door, but before exiting I turn her. "And oh, your fired from my club." I walk out and go straight to my car.3

\*\*\*\*

"Damn Chanelle aborted yo' baby though?" Bishop questions, as he puff on the blunt that we're sharing. We stood on his porch, just chilling, waiting for this one cat to pop up, he has a deal for us.

I smack my lips and shrug. "Yeah, talking about her baby

deserve a family home and shit. She killed my baby and got pregnant by another nigga....its whatever though, I ain't gotta deal with her ass no more, so it's cool."

He passes me the blunt as he stomps on a big sized ant. "How's Makiela and baby girl doing? They mad at me?" He ask.

"Nah they cool." I say as I chuckle, but more to myself. "Bri wants me to turn you in, she talking a little crazy."

"You gon' do that shit?" He ask he tunrs his head my way. I inhale the smoke from the blunt and pass it to him.

"Nah man....both her and Makiela said I should...but I ain't..you my fam."

He hits the blunt and look at the sky, the brightness of the sun caused him to squint his eyes. "Good....you ain't switching up over no bitch. I can appreciate that."25

Hearing those words offend me, and leave me only to wonder who he is referring to. "What you talking about man?"

"Makiela...im glad you staying loyal to ya fam and ain't switching up because of a bitch."3

Before I can think, I swing on him striking him in the side of his face. He pushes me, and give me a cold glare.

"What the fuck is wrong with you?" He growls.

"Don't talk about my girl like that, you ain't gotta call her out of her name."3

"Man look at you...why you acting like this? I ain't hating on your girl or nothin, I'm just saying don't let her convince you that the shit I did was foul.....her punk ass baby daddy deserved that shit."

"I ain't let her convince me a'ight, that's why you still on the streets now. I would do anything for Aabria, but going againts you is something I had to turn down. I don't appreciate you calling my woman out of her name."

"Well my bad nigga."3

An 2016 Lincoln SUV, colored a lattè gold pulls up into the drive way, causing both of us to chill and bring our attention to it. Another car then parks behind it.

"This him now."

A smooth cat then shuts the car off and exits. He wore a suit, that had to cost a fortune, he looked like one of them rich niggas, kind of reminded me of Uncle Branco.

"Wassup youngins?" He steps on the porch and stand infront of us.

"What's good og?" Bishop ask as he gives him a brotherly hug. "That's your security back there?" He nods at the truck.

"Yeah I have to keep them near when I'm rolling through the hood."

"Cool cool." Bishop rubs the side of his face where I punched him at. "Um this my lil coz Zee and Zee this Silas."33

"How you doin?"

"Good fam." I give him a brotherly hugs.

"Zee I hear your name in the streets a lot, I hear your coming up.....your already a 5 star at what 27?"

"That's right man.....I put in a little work."

"You and B has the hottest clubs in LA, that's what I really came to talk to about."

"What about 'em?" Bishop looks up.

"I want to buy both of your joints, 1.2 million for each?"

In my mind it wasn't an good offer, but Bishop face lit up from the numbers he heard.

"I'm down." He says.

I shake my head from side to side and slightly rub my chin.

"You can have his club but you can't have mine."

"You crazy nigga? He said 1.2 million." Bishop tells me.

"I guess I am crazy....I wanna keep my place. It ain't no sense of buying it if I already make that much. I got 40 girls.....i get good money."

"Wow....40 hoes, how many of them tricking?" He questions.

"I'll rather not say...but I wanna keep my place."

"What if I offer you 3.6 million."

"I'm cool man. I can't really take your offer though."

"Don't offend me." He says.10

"Look man...I ain't giving up my club."

"Well Bishop I look forward to doing business with you."

Chanelle.

My father gets in the car and I sit back in my chair so Zayn wouldn't see as the car door was being swung open.<sup>8</sup>

"So you've really been messing with the enemy who killed your brother? Nigga doesn't even wanna give me his club."

"Daddy I told you I didn't know he killed Jeremy until I met up with Aiyaan again. That's why I aborted his baby."<sup>17</sup>

"Whatever."

I found out a few months ago from Aiyaan that Zayn and a few other guys killed my older brother Jeremy, so I did abort Zayn's child. I found no need to have a baby by a killer.<sup>20</sup>

Makiela.



Class is now over so I gather up all of my things, I am now a sophomore in college and it feels good to be here, the new things I have learned in fashion is just great.

I grab my bags in exit out of the classroom along with everyone else. I decide to go to the little supply store we have here and grab some fashion tools, such as thread, needles, fabric and a little other accessories, I wanted to make me and the girls matching dresses.

As I'm putting stuff in my hand held basket, I feel a tap on my shoulder, I then turn around and see Alicia.

"Hey love!" I hug her.

"Hi Ms. Randall." She smiles at me and pick something out of my hair. "You look so gorgeous today, did you make this your self?" She says referring to my new dress.

"No Zayn bought me some new winter dresses a few days ago, how are you?" I ask.

"Great, but how are the twins I seen the pics you sent, they look exactly like your boyfriend."

"I get that a lot, but they are fine and healthy."

"I was thinking.....if you can't get all the designs ready in time I can postpone the wedding."

"Oh no honey, I am almost done. I am done with all the dresses, except yours and Karens and I am putting the finishing touches to your husband suit, I'll be done in a few weeks, maybe less."

"Alright, well call me when you get the chance."

"Will do."

She waves goodbye and walk away. My phone then starts ringing, I look at the caller identification, only to see a call from Aiyaan.<sup>1</sup>

I haven't talked to him since Jayson got killed, I felt no reason to talk to him during that time.

"Hello?" I ask as I answer the phone.

"Wassup baby girl?!" He shouts through the phone.

I rub my forehead and roll my eyes, he is so obnoxious. "Hi Yaan....what do you want?"

"We're having a little family get together at my crib, Malik and Joey is here and shit, Camilla here too, I'm just barbecuing, I want you to stop by real quick."<sup>10</sup>

"Alright I'll be there in a mintue."

After I leave the store, I take a twenty mintue drive to Aiyaan's condo, surprisingly I didn't see any of my family cars parked here, only his nice midnight black hummer and a gold suv and a limo parked on the curb.<sup>14</sup>

I roll my eyes and put my phone in my purse. Then I exit the car and approach his door, I ring the doorbell and wait for him to answer.

The door opens and he grins at me. "Wassup sis!" He forces me into a hug and I sigh as I rub his back.

"Hey Yaan." I look at the people sitting on the couch, I wasn't related to any of them. It was a five men and three women, I frown at Aiyaan. "Where is our family?"

"Oh they'll be here in a minute they went to the store, let me introduce you to every body." He closes the front door and

pull my arm as he walks me further into the living room.

"These my homies, Benard, Sammy, Antonio, Jackie and Silas and these just some random hoes I invited." He says referring to the women.<sup>8</sup>

"Damn you are beautiful, I need a pretty girl like you." A man in a suit says as he licks his lip and gaze at my body.

"Thankyou I'm taken too." I say blowing him off quicky before his flirting gets too deep.

"Oh okay." He lifts his hands up in the air.

"Follow me in the kitchen sis, I want you to taste this chicken I just còoked." Aiyaan says as he goes into the kitchen, I follow him and I look at all the food sitting on the counter.<sup>3</sup>

"You mad at me sis?"

"Why did you bring Jayson to my home."

"I ain't know all of that was gonna go down, I ain't even know that him and your man had beef like that. Can you forgive me?" He ask.<sup>2</sup>

"Yeah I can forgive you."<sup>1</sup>

"Here taste this." He grabs a small chicken wing and put it to my mouth.

"Take a big bite."<sup>17</sup>

I do as I'm told in it was so spicy! My taste buds , tounge and jaws were on fire, I spit out the piece of meat and begin coughing.<sup>2</sup>

"What the hell?!" I scream.

"Damn sis I'm sorry, hold on." Aiyaan rushes in go into the fridge and pour me some orange juice.<sup>9</sup>

"Here sis."

I snatch it from him and gown it all down. "Why does it taste like vodka?!" I exclaimed.

"Girl I mix my OJ. I'm sorry, I must've put in too much Tabasco sauce, I used a whole bottle."<sup>7</sup>

"Your dumb." I take a deep breath, even with the cold drink I just had my mouth was still burning.

After ten mintues of waiting for my other family to show up, I begin to feel dizzy and I can't even control my balance, my vision even seems blurry.<sup>20</sup>

I feel myself fall but someone catches me. "You think she

out?" I hear someone ask, I couldn't even speak.

"Yeah she's out."<sup>12</sup>

Out of no where I feel my clothes being stripped off and I could barely function<sup>45</sup>

Zayn what made you propose?" I ask Zayn as were cuddling in the bed next to each other, with the lights turned down.+

He strokes my hair softly and kiss my forehead, making feel content. "Because how many girls-- I mean women, do you know ride for they man like you do? When I confessed that I was into that trap shit, you allowed it and even til this day you don't like it but still support me. I cheated on you and got the girl pregnant but your still here....besides Bishop, you never shame me for killing my sister. And you gave me two beautiful kids...so why not marry you?" He explains.<sup>16</sup>



I sit up a little just to stare into his almond colored eyes, I look away as I let a smile appear across my face. His response really put me in a high spirits, just knowing that he actually wants me.

"What?" He ask.

"I just still can't believe I'm getting married. I always told myself that if Jay didn't want me than who else would? I'm just happy and I can't believe that you wanna marry me." I scratch left arm as I look over at him, he stares into my eyes and kiss my lips.

"Kiela, I love you...I think your beautiful and I fell in love with your innocence and your spirit man." He rubs his eyes and yawn. "I'm just tryna be with you and these kids forever."4

"I love you too." I lean over and kiss his cheek.

"When is our wedding?" He ask me.

"The twins birthday next year." I suggest.7

He wraps his arm around me and I rest my heqd on his bare chest. "How about on the day we first met?"

"You remember when we first met?" I raise my eyebrow in shock.

"December 12th...that was the first day I laid on eyes you and Aabria."12

"Wow...." I jerk my head back, and giggle at him.

"What?" He ask with a smirk.

"You for real for real crazy about me!" I laugh. "I swear the only day I remember by date...is the first time we made love.

I am so in love with you I don't even pay attention to dates, I'm just glad where together."4

"You wanna try to have another baby?"6

"Are you crazy? Boy bye..I won't be having any more kids for a long time." I roll my eyes at him.

He scrunch up his face as he poke out his lips a little. "Why not?" He questions.

"You try spending 21 hours in labor."3

\*\*\*\*

"Diamond this is cute fit for you." I say to Diamond as I hold up a sundress, she turns around with Zaibree in her arms and shakes her head.

"Nah it ain't that cute, too colorful." She replies.

I put back on the hanger, and place Zeejay's pacifier back in his mouth as he's in his stroller. Aabria stands beside and I rub her head as I look at the prices on these dresser, I decided to take Diamond and the kids to the mall just to get some new things.

"Mommy can I get a pink case for my Ipad?" Aabria questions while looking up at me.

"Maybe baby, we're focused on clothes right now." I tell her.

"So how is school going Diamond?" I ask Diamond as I pick a piece of lint out of Zaibree's hair.

"It's straight. How's school for you?"

"Its alright, I'm thinking about accepting this job at Linnea

Lenkus, and be a stylist and designer here for thier models? I'm slowly but surely working my way." I say as I smile and begin to move the stroller along the aisle, Diamond and Aabria follows behind me.

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 📖 📱 ♂

I stop at the perfum that's standing on the shelves and begin use my nose to sniff the all the fragrance from a small bottle. Aabria begins to smell as well.

"Kiela, I need some advice." Diamond says as she lean against the wall and Zaibree lays her head on her shoulder.

"What's up?"

"Well.....I have a crush on this guy."

"Is he cute?" I lift my eyebrow as I corner my eyes at her, giving her a goofy look.

Her eyes roll to the back of her head and she licks her lips, I can tell she had a good image in her head of him, by the seductive body language she was giving off. "Yes girl he is fine. His name Zachary."<sup>31</sup>

"Oooo Zachary, how old is he and how long have you guys been talking?" I ask as I continue to sniff on the different scents of perfume.

"He's 17, and he's a sooner. We've known each other since I came to the school, so for a few months. I really like, but he's way too nice. But I'm feel a bit skeptical about him and his behavior." She lowers her eyes.<sup>1</sup>

"You don't like nice guys?" I question.

"I do. But Zach is over board with it....like he sends me poems everyday, tell me im pretty when I look a hot mess, he ties my shoes Makiela. Anything I want I can have...and



he's outside of my every class waiting for me."7

I poke out my bottom lip, and let out a few chuckles. "Well he sounds like a dream come true, what's the real problem?"11

She scratches her nose, and let off a small smirk. "Well I'm just not use to guys being so nice, I don't want a man who's gonna be completely disrespectful. But I like a little roughness you know, like you Zayn."

She says and I look over at her, giving her a playful frown. "Girl...."

"I'm serious, like yall are so cute. especially when you be trying to talk all tough and he put you in your place, you know you like that." She knits her eyebrows together in a silly manner.

"It turns me on a little." I admit as I hold my fingers up to demonstrate. "But Zee is very sweet, when we first met he

paid for Aabria's skating lesson, when we got together he bought me my scholarship....and sometimes I didn't understand why he is so nice and good to me, it doesn't necessarily mean a man is crazy or is a total stalker, he just have gentle men qualities. Zayn is sorta thuggish...but he's also a gentleman."2

She poorly smiles as if something was discouraging her.  
"Are-- Are y-you happy that you too are getting married?"9

"Yeah girl, more than happy. He is the man of my dreams. And marrying him would just complete my list of desires." I vent.

"That's good." She says.

Zayn

"You know what today is right?" My mother ask through the phone, I sit in the car and stare at the small picture of my

baby sister, and I shed a few tears.1

"Zayn you there?" My mother ask, knocking me off of my train of thought.

"Yeah mom I'm here, and April 23rd....the day Leyana passed, I-I know."4

"Are you okay?"

"Yeah ma.....I call you'll back alright." I hang up without even allowing her to say good bye.

I stare at the picture, and smile when I see her smiling back at me. "You know I didn't mean to right? I miss you so much little girl....so much. I look at my baby girl and see you every day...im sorry....im sorry Ley." I say out loud.5

They say thugs don't cry, but this one do and I always will

when it comes to my baby sister. I take a breather, and I finally shut off my car and make an exit.

It's been weeks since Bishop been on chemo therapy, he's been in the hospital trying to get better and I come up here and visit him often.<sup>1</sup>

With in ten minutes, after going through an elevator and talking receptionist. I open the door before entering.

His girl friend Jaimee was sitting beside while holding their three year old daughter Birdee.<sup>3</sup>

"Hey Zayn." She greets me with a warm smile.

"Hey Jaimee, how you doing?" I walk over to her and pick up my niece, and give them both a kiss on the cheek.

"Holding up, he's sleep right now."

"I see...how he been holding up?"

"He's depressed." She says with tears swelling up in her eyes, I know this has been an emotional toll on her. "We just want him to get better.....all he really wants is to be here for his daughter."

"Yeah I know." I give Birdee back to her, and walk over to my cousins bed side, I grab his hand and hold it tight, he was extremely thin, he lost at least fifty pounds and his skin looked very dry, this cancer shit really hit him hard, I wished he did the therapy sooner

We found out that he's been walking around with it unknowingly for at least six months.1

I shut my eyes and tightened the grip on his hand, as I say a silent prayer in my head.

"Hey g." He says in a dry husky tone.

"Wassup boy, how you doing."

"Man I don't feel good, my heart been hurting and I been have these fucked up migraines..im just fed up with this shit man. Hoping this lil therapy work." He vents as he looks up at me.

"Just keep the faith man, im here for you. You know that."

"You getting married huh? Why you ain't record it for me...I wanted to see how mommy was gonna react from it." He says then he begins to cough heavy and uncontrollably.<sup>3</sup>

"My heart hurts dog." He shakes his head in disbelief.<sup>5</sup>

"Take it easy alright? And I'll send the video to your phone when I get back to the crib. What did the doctors say about your health though blood?"

"The shit aint really clearing up....we just waiting it out. But I know for sure that I'm dying so--"7

"B stop talking like that!" Jaimee says through gritted teeth as tears fall from her eyes.

He turns to her. "But it's true....God told me him self that my time to go is coming real soon Jai, I told you that."2

"Don't talk like that though okay, you scaring everyone." I tell him.

"Look Zee.....im not gon make. I don't when I'm gonna go but it's gonna be soon." He begins to shed tears. "Just take care of them alright."4

I cover my eyes with my hand to keep from getting emotional. "B stop man, you're not going anywhere."1

"Zee....listen to me. The doctor said that the chemo may not even work....I know that I'm not gonna survive this shit, alright I need you man...please take care of them."

"B you know if something does happen to you, ima take care of your family. I just don't like you being negative like this."

"But it's the truth." He lowers his eyes, staring at his lap as he shake his head.

"I got you." I tell him, then lean down in hug him.

"I appreciate you coz, I really do man. I'm tryna fight through this but I also gotta face reality."

I nod my head, but not in understanding because I have faith that my cousin will still make it against all odds.6

\*\*\*\*



I enjoy the night, and cruise the streets of LA, filled with bright attracting lights. Diamond called saying that she was at her friend Ciara's house and wanted me to come pick her up.<sup>1</sup>

I finally arrive at the house, parking in the empty drive way. I send her text on the phone and with in a minute she makes it out side, with a white PINK jogging suit on and her book bag.

She enters the car, and smiles at me before closing the door shut. "Hello sir." She says in a sarcastic tone.

"Wassup?" I ask while gearing the car in reverse, then I pull off.

"Nothin much, how was your day." She puts on her seat belt.

"It was good, when was the last time you talk to Kiela?"

"Oh we went to the mall today, then I asked her to drop me off at Ciara's so we can study, she said her cousin was in town so she went to go see them at her parents house."

"Oh okay."

"Why are you drinking while driving, are you trying to get a DUI?"<sup>1</sup>

"Chill out."

"You shouldn't do that though, but if you want me to shut up, then I will." She shrugs it off.

We finally get home, and I am saddened that my fiancée and children is not here. So now I must lighten my own mood, with some weed and a lot of food. I take off my jacket put it in the closet. After that, I go into the kitchen to see a two plates on the stove, wrapped up in foil, a note from Kiela was on both of them.

Diamond can you please clean up the kitchen for me after your done eating, thanks sweet pea.

I then look at the other letter.

I know I couldve texted you, but I wanted to be extra :) My cousin Sahmera is in town, so the kids and I is staying at my parents for tonight. I love you pookie man...make sure you take some asprin for your head.9

Love Wifey.

Diamond comes in the kitchen and wash her hands. "You okay?"

"Yeah, Makiela and the kids is not gonna home tonight, so she wants you to clean up the kitchen."

"Oooo okay." She smirks.18

"I'm gonna go in the basement in relax, goodnight."

"Good night."

Diamond

I lay in my bed while scrolling down Instagram on my phone, I like a few pics that see and twirl one my box braids around my finger. I get a text from Zachary and decide to ignore it, I'm starting to lose interest in him.3

I hear loud thunk coming from near by, so I rush out of the bed, and go into the hall way, the bathroom light was on, so I walk over and stand in the door way to see Zayn picking up a whole bunch of objects, he seem to be off balance.1

"You okay?" I ask.

"Yeah I'm just buzzing, I made all of this shit fall."

"Oh."

I gaze at his well toned muscles, his body is built in perfection and he's nearly ripping out of his wife beater, I lick my lips and my flip my hair as I stare down at him, he looks at me and give me a small warm smile, and walk pass me then goes into the living room.<sup>5</sup>

Now that he's drunk I can probably try something new. I go back into my room. After a half in hour, I come out of my room with my hands in the pockets of pajama shorts.<sup>6</sup>

I dash down the stairs and reach the basement, where he's laying on the couch sleeping peacefully. I look at the small wood table, where a bag of weed, rellos, and a bud light is on the surface.

I snatch the weed and rellos off of the counter in a swift moment, and hid behind the wall. I then retrieve the small bag of cocaine mixed with a few crushed ecstasy pills along with ketamine. I begin to roll him up a laced blunt. After I'm

finished, I set the blunt on the table and lightly shake him.<sup>31</sup>

He twitches his eyes, they then open and he looks up at me.  
"What?" He asks agitated

"I-I think someone is creeping out side of the house, I saw someone looking through the windows." I tell a tale,

He groans and sit up as he use both of his hands to cover his face. I stare at him, rhen with in seconds he jumps out from his seat, then go into the small closet and comes back into the room with a pistol.

I follow him as he goes up stairs, but he turns around and face me. "You stay down here so you can safe."

"Okay." I play with my sleeve as I smile softly, he continues to walk up the stairs and I turn on my heels and sit on the couch waiting for him to come back.

After about twenty minutes, he comes back down to the basement, he take a deep breath as he goes to return the gun in it's original spot.

He sits down on the couch beside me, and grabs the blunt from off the table, my hearts then begin to race, I'm feeling anxious and nervous, but still hoping that my plan goes through. I observe as he places it between his lips, he slumps in his seat and reach down into his pocket pulling out a lighter.

He lights it and begin to smoke, he grabs the remote from the couch and turn on the television.

"Did you see anyone?" I ask, breaking our silence.

"Nah....I went outside to check and I went over the security camera's. I seen no one." He says as he exhales the smoke.  
"You can go on to bed, everything is fine."1

With that being said I nod my head and stand up, I straightened out my pajamas while facing him. "Do you need something before I go to bed?"

"Um yeah, can you bring me another beer and bring those box of cheeze it's?" He ask.

"Okay."

I wait for an hour to go by before I go back down stairs to check on Zayn, I never delivered what he asked for, because I wanted the high to fully kick in so I can have my way with him. I wore sexy red lingerie for him and sweet perfume to soothe his mind.<sup>2</sup>

I make my way down to the basement, to see him sleep again with his shirt off, sweat was dripping from his body, just by that I knew he was out of it.

"Zayn?" I call out, but he fails to respond.



A devious smirk spreads across my face, as I walk over to him and plant myself on his lap. "Zayn." I whisper in his ear.

"What Kiela?" He whines in a groggy tone. Hmph...this gon' be easier than I thought. I say to myself.

I pull out his hard member and begin to take advantage. Once my mouth touches it, he begins to groan in fulfillment.<sup>23</sup>

Makiela.

"Aabria come sit down please." I point to the chair beside, Aabria has a doctors appointment today to check up on her disability.

"I-I-I d-don't want to." She rolls her eyes.

"Please baby." I ask nicely, but she gives in. I noticed when I am more patient with her she listens better. She sits beside me in the doctor walks in with a smile.

"Alright ladies I am back. Ms.Randall, we have examined Aabria and she still has a minor brain injury but I am going to diagnosed with with schizoaffective disorder."

"What is that?" I asked clueless,as I look down at the twins.

"Schizoaffective, is a mental illness where a person has manic episodes, mood changes, hallucination, delusion and much more. But I don't think this disorder came from Aabria drowning, I think it's something personal that has caused her to act out in a such way." She explains.<sup>7</sup>

"Personal like what?"<sup>3</sup>

"Its something that led her to get the disorder. But we can give her a medication for it,"

"You guys have already diagnosed my child with ADHD, Bi-polar and now this. Your telling me my child is crazy."

"Hey I'm not crazy!" Aabria chimes in as she folds her arms.

"Yes honey your not crazy." The doctor taps her knee and give her a genuine smile, she then looks back up at me with a blank expression. "Aabria just needs a lot of attention, you just have to be patient with her. I know that dealing with children with these type of illness, aren't easy. But you must get through it."

"Okay I understand."

\*\*\*\*

I unlock the door to our house and Aabria runs in first, I carry both of the twins car seats inside and kick the door close behind me.

"I'm home!" I yell, but got no response.

I get settled in and place both of kids in thier swings. I already fed all the kids, now it was time to see my fiancé, I go upstairs to our room to see are bed neatly made up the way I left it.

I take a deep breath and go walk through out the house searching for him. Then it hits me that he could be down stairs.

"Zayn!" I call his name in a jolly tone as I rush down the stairs. The smile on face fades when I see him sleeping on the couch with his harm member hanging out of his pants.

"Did you really jack off while I was go on?" I ask.

The basement is a total mess so I begin to clean up, as I'm picking up clothes off the small, I see a small bag that has a nice amount of powder in it and my anger literally begins to boil.

I clutch it my hand, and hover over Zayn. "Wake up!" I say as slap him in the face.

"Yo-- what the fu--!"

"What the hell is this?!" I throw it on his chest and he scoots and grabs it, then try to look at it as if he never seen it before. He then jumps when he sees his penis and put it back in his pants.

"Look! This ain't mine baby!" He jumps up from his seat.

I strike him in the face with my hand once more, I was heated. "Why are you doing this again?! You really don't care about your family!" I shout, on the verge of tears.<sup>3</sup>

He grabs my arm and push me against the wall as his tall figure. "This shit is not mine I swear to you!"

"No! Stop lying Zayn, just be a man about it!"<sup>1</sup>

"I am being a man about it, I've been a man about for the last year! I haven't fucked with any of this shit! Baby I don't know how it got in here!"

"Whatever, I'm done! I can't keep going through this shit!" I try to push him off of me but he pins me down to the wall and stare into my eyes.<sup>2</sup>

"I just asked you to be my wife a few days ago? I would I even ruin the chance. That's not mine Kiela."

"Then whose is it?" I ask sternly.

"It's mine." We both turn our head to see Diamond standing on the last step, fiddling with her fingers.

Zayn releases his grip on me, and hold on to his pants as he slowly walks over to her. "What do you mean it's yours?"

"I'm holding it for a friend, I swear to y'all that I'm not using any. My friend Dalia, is going through some things."

I step in front of her and frown as I fold my arms, it was kind of hard to believe her story. "Why would you bring it here?" I question.1

"I told you im holding it for her." She says nervously.

"Will get rid of it for her and him. I don't need him around here getting tempted.4

Shit." I whisper in Zayn's ear as I bite on my lip and he grants me with slow strokes. It feels so amazing like always and I want to scream, but with children in the house, I can't. I feel my climax coming so I squeal and he bites on my neck.5

I now came all over his shaft, he plants a soft kiss on my lips before pulling out of me. He then climbs off and I watch

as he goes into the bathroom, and I hear the water from the shower running.

I pull the covers off of me and get out of the bed as well, I walk my naked body into the bathroom and open the shower door and get in with Zayn.

"Why can't I take a shower alone woman?" He says in a playful manner.

"Because I wanna be with you." I move him out of the way so I can be closer to the shower head and I grab my wash rag along with Dove bar soap, then begin to rub the soap around the towel allowing it to lather up. I then wash myself up, and Zayn's scrubs my back as I do so.

"Can you watch the kids today, I have a job interview?" I ask him as I scrub my leg.

"Why do you have to ask me to watch my kids?" He asks in a defensive tone. "You know got it."



"Im just asking, cause you know you be out and about, running the streets." I respond as while looking back him.

"I got my kids Kiela."

After a half an hour I get dress into a long sleeved, tight fitted dress, that's colored a bright dark baby blue, I decide to leave my naturally curly hair down, and put a side part to it, and I throw on some white heels.

Once im dressed I go downstairs and start cooking breakfast for my family, while Aabria and Zayn our feeding the twins their bottles.

"Zayn do you want blue berries in your pancakes?!" I call out.

"No, straight butter milk." He replies.

"Okay butter milk." I mumble to myself.

With in twenty minutes breakfast is ready, I set the table and place Aabria and Zayn's plates down. "Come eat!" I yell.

They both enter the kitchen, I watch as Aabria hops up in the chair and says a silent prayer over her food, Zayn does the same thing and I smile at them.

"I have to go in a mintue you guys." I say once they are done.

"Where you going mama?" Aabria ask as she pops a straw berry in her mouth.

"Mommy has a job interview to go to, but I'll be back in a few hours."

Diamond then enters the dining room with a sports bra on

and some shorts, that stopped at the beginning of her thighs, it was rather brief. "Good morning Zayn." She walks passes me and go into the fridge. I was offended that she didn't even bother to greet me, nor my daughter.<sup>7</sup>

And her choice of clothing, obviously states that she wants attention. I turn to her and bit on the corner of my lip.

"Diamond?"

"Yes?" She turns around with a devious smirk on her face as she hold a water bottle in her hands.

"Didn't we talk about you showing to much skin, where are you going with that on?" I actually didn't care if she wore it out side the house, cause I was a teenager once....but I never dress liked her. The real problem is that she's dressed like this in front of a man, a girl her age doesn't need to flaunting in front of a male, it's just like woman like.

"It's hot in here." She shrugs, I can tell she didn't care. "I'm not about to wear a mountain of clothes."

"Well if it's hot go turn on the air. Just make sure it's at a fair temperature, I don't want the kids to get a cold." I explain.

## YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets of the.Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🚬 🚫 🍀

"And that's exactly why I'm not turning on." She smiles, then sits next to Zayn.

"Um Zay?"<sup>1</sup>

"Wassup D?" He responds to her.

"Do you think you can give a 500 dollars?"<sup>2</sup>

"For what?" He raises his eyebrow. "What do you need that much money for?"

"I need to get some new stuff, you know im bulging a new studio in my room."

"I'll think about it." He says.

She smiles, then slowly gets up. "Okay." I watch as she walks away.

I come into the dining room with a big bowl of fruit and begin to pile some more on their plates. "I don't think you should give her anything Zayn.....I know I'm the one who took her in but im starting to feel sketchy about her."

He lifts his shoulders, and looks up at me. "You know she likes to sing babe, it can be useful."

"Alright just peep her out alright, just don't give her anything just because she ask."

"I got you baby." He says.

"Alright I gotta go."

"Mommy give me hug first!" Aabria yells out, I giggle and give her a tight hug and a big sloppy kiss on her forehead, and she giggles. I then give Zayn a kiss on the lips.

"Do not let the twins sleep all day, or their gonna be up all night." I warn, ask I grab my black Chanel bag off of the counter.

"Okay my queen, I got it. Go kill em at that interview boo boo!" He lightens his voice.<sup>3</sup>

"Shut up." I giggle.

Makiela.

I have arrived to California Market Center, I smile at a man who walks pass me as I go through the revolving doors entering the builing. I glance around at the place just to get quick a feel, then I spot a guide on the wall and go over to it, in search for the floor that I'm suppose to get on to reach



my destination.

"Floor 7." I mumble to my self as I as I slide my finger off of the guide.

I carry myself to the elevator, and clutch on to my purse tight. The doors open, and a small group of people exit, I make my entrance and press number 7, then lean on the wall as the door closes.

Within in five minutes I make it to Carmella Travis's office, I knock on her door and await for an answer.

She opens with a wide smile spreading across her face. She's a pretty woman, with long straight hair that stops in the middle of her back, her make up is clearly done professionally and it matches the fresh, spring colors of her floaty dress that has spaghetti straps, she has a warm caramel complexion. I admire her choice in style already.  
"May I help you?"

"Yes I'm Makiela Randall, the woman you talked to a few days ago."

"Aw yes!" She smiles from the remembrance of me. "You're very pretty." She says while shaking my hand.

"I can say the exact same about you." I compliment.

"Well come on in, let's get this conference started shall we?" She gestures for me to enter, and I do just that and close the door behind me.

I sit down in the seat closest to his desk, that made us sit across from each other, she grabs her mug and takes a sip of coffee before sitting down in her seat. I checked out her actions and mannerism, I can tell that her work ethic has quality.

"So how are you today?" She asks as she logs in to her laptop.

I cross my legs, and straighten out the creases on the bottom of my dress. "I'm fine and your self?"

"I am great. Now Makiela, I looked at the designs you sent me and I seen your models rocking your creations, and I also saw what you did for Alicia Chènin's wedding, and I loved all of it, I admire your art love." She folds her hands together as she looks at me.

"Thank you Ms.Travis, I appreciate the compliment." I nod.

"Now tell me why do you want to be my assistant?"

"Well I know that your a designer your self, and your mother Carolina Rivers was the best black female designer out of the LA Fashion years ago, I just want to be under a wing that can guide me the right way and a stepping stool. And I love to help people with designs, in the decription it says

that their would be times when I'll have to help you design certain things."

"Yes you will, and I like your answer. But to be completely honest, I don't need an asistant."

"Then why am I here?" I try to ask as nicely as possible. I don't want to feel like I'm wasting time.

"Well I'm relocating one of my stores here to New York and I need some one to run one of my Fashion Warehouses, I have employees that already sews, that's designs clothes, that's just amazing, all the greats come there and check in sometimes."

"You want me to take over your store?"

"Yeah....its pretty easy."

"I would love to do that." I say, not holding back any excitement.

"Do you really think you can handle it?." She ask for confirmation.

"I'm sure that I can." I grin.

After twenty minutes we talk more about the buisness, and our conversation starts to come to an end.

We both rise up and shake each others hand

"Well Makiela, the fashion buisness will be in your hands next month on the 22nd" She informs to me.<sup>3</sup>

"Thank you so much Ms.Travis, I am looking foward to it." I say with a smile.

Zayn.

Since Makiela came home early, I decide to visit my cousin.

After approaching the receptionist, I enter his room to see him sitting up on the bed playing with his daughter Birdee.

"Wassup man." I say with a wide grin as I walk over to him.

"Hey Coz." He says while playing with his daughters hand.

I place the Chipotle bag on his side table and sit beside him.<sup>3</sup>

"You bought me some food?" He ask.

"Yeah Jaimee said you need to eat, how you feeling?"

"Well its clearing up finally and I gained three pounds." He says as he kisses Birdee's cheek, I can tell that he's excited about getting better and the lord knows I am too.<sup>8</sup>

"For real?! That's my boy man! Yo....that's the best news I

heard all day fam." I say with glee in my tone while rubbing the back of my head. "So when you gon be able to get out."1

"I'm not sure, they wanna see what the next level is going to take. But ya boy is feeling better, I'm breathing right, getting my weight back up...,I just gotta take care of myself."3

"You got too." I slap my hands together as I lean over. "Your gonna make it man, I guarantee it to you." I say with confidence.

He nods in agreement. "I believe you."

"Imma make it to my baby birthday though." He says as he lifts one year old birdee in the air, causing her to giggle uncontrollably.1

"You gon make it period." I state.

"How Kiela and the kids doin'?" He ask changing the subject, I want to still tell him to stop thinking negative but I allow him to have his way this time.

"They doing good...Kiela gonna be running one of the biggest fashion rings in LA and the kids growing, Zeejay is learning fast...six months and Zaibree learned hold her own bottle finally "1

"That's what's up." He nods. "Do you think this shit is karma?" He questions as he lays Birdee on his chest.2

I scrunch up my face in confusion. "What'chu mean?"

"Me having cancer, I took a life...do you think that's why I got this shit."1

"Man you can't base your illness off of that shit. Things happen man. It's not karma, Jay was the only person you killed....and he took your Lil Mikey away from you and ya mom, if anything that was his karma. But don't beat yourself



about it, things happen. It wasn't right but you gotta move on. And focus on getting better."

"You right man, but when you gon' let the fact that you killed Leyana go?" He ask so bluntly, that it shocked me. I wouldn't think that he would bring that up.

" I mean, when something like that happens there is no way someone can just forget it. Can I forgive myself, maybe? But forgetting no....but I'm getting better. We was talking about you tho' nigga." I chuckle and he does as well.

"Well let's forgive and forget then fam."

"Cool." I agree.

\*\*\*\*

I pull up to my home, to see my mother's 2006 Honda Civic in the drive way, I turn off the engine and exit the car, I then go inside of my home, to hear Makiela and my mother

talking already.

"I know how to take care of kids Angel." Makiela says annoyed. "I did become a mother at 15."

"And that's my point Kiela, your a young mother so let me give you some tips. Don't put thier bottles in a the dish washer, hand wash it your self." My mother tells her.<sup>4</sup>

"Okay Angel sure, can I just finish feeding my child please."

"I got it, go sit down some where you seem stress."

I walk into the living room to see my mother taking Zeejay out of Makiela's arm, Kiela held a strong mug on her face. Her and my mother just don't see eye to eye at sometime, which is truly sad. But I can understand why don't like each other.<sup>1</sup>

"Hey Zayn." My mother greets me.

Zeejay looks at me with a wide grin. "Wassup ma." I grunt as I grab my son from her.

"Your little girl friend not listening again, she's trying to kill my grand children."

"No she not ma." I fake a small cackle. "What you doing here?"

"What? I just can't come and check on my son and grandbabies."

"You can ma, give me a minute." I then go into the family room where Makiela is un strapping Zaibree from her swing set.

"You need your diaper change mama, huh?" She whispers to her.

"You okay baby?" I ask her, she turns ask around and throws Zaibree's burp towel over her shoulder.

"Yes I'm okay love, your mother is just down my throat like always." She vents.

"I'm sorry about that, you wanna go out tonight and get some alone time, just me and you."

"How? We don't have a baby sitter. Diamond is at her friends house, my parents are workin an--"

"And the kids have a grand mother, who's gonna watch them." I turn around to see my mother standing in the door way, Makiela rolls her eyes and go to the other side of the room and sit in the chair."

"I ain't tryna go no where Zayn I'm fine."

I am really getting annoyed by my mother's presence, it's like she goes out of her way to irritate Kiela. "Mom we good." I turn to her.

"No yall go ahead and go out, I got them." She insist.<sup>1</sup>

I walk over to Kiela, and lay my head on her shoulder, soothed by her laundry detergent scent already. "Lets go out and celebrate."<sup>1</sup>

"No Zayn....I just wanna be with my babies today." She squirms, and Zaibree reaches over and hits my head multiple times

"We're with them every single day. Let's just get a break, my mom well take good care of them, you know that."<sup>3</sup>

She turns to me and slightly frowns. "If we go somewhere, where only staying for an hour, and coming back home."

"Deal." I say.

We hear heavy foot steps from the stair case, and it's little Aabria dashing down of course. "Mommy I'm up from my nap!" She yells in excitement, she comes in the room and it seems like her joy fades once she sees my mother, cause an unpleased look spread across her face.<sup>28</sup>

"Well hello little Bri."

"Hi." Aabria responds quietly.

"Bri, Daddy and I are about to go in a minute, I want you to help Angel out with your brother and sister." Makiela tells her.

She walks over to us and squeeze between us to sit down.

"Well when are yall coming back?"

"In hour or so." I inform her. "Just be good, well bring you something back."

"Okay daddy."

\*\*\*\*

"Aabria gon be mad us." Makiela says as we walk down the path, holding hands and admiring the glistening stars in the sky, along with the brilliant shining moon. It cool breeze feathers across our skin, and the weather isn't muggy like it usually is.

"Why you say that, cause we been out for too long?" I ask.

"Yep." She giggles. "We been out for three hours."

"Yeah she is, but since you got your little store you know what I got?" I question as I grab her hand and hold it tight.

"What?"

"I took on another club and I'm investing a car lot business, so we'll be getting some more money."

"Yasssse bae!" She claps her hands. "You better own you some shit boy! Why a car lot?"

"I love cars...So I don't mind selling them. In six months where moving, so start searching for a new crib."

She stares at the side of my face, as I look ahead at the sky.  
"Why we moving baby?"

"Because Aabria is traumatized....she sits in the same spot Jay got killed, the exact same spot. I caught her a few times."

"To be honest I wanted to move out as soon as it happen,



but didn't wanna put pressure on you or anything." She explains.

"You could've said something baby."

Aabria.

"Your hurting me! Stop it!" I cry as Angel hits me an extension cord, I did nothing at all, she's mad because I was in the bathroom too long. It lot was going on, she was screaming, I was crying and my baby brother and sister was screaming.<sup>46</sup>

"When I tell you to do something you listen to me!" She grabs my arm, and swing me across the room and the sound from a bone cracking could be heard.<sup>6</sup>

"Ow! I think you broke my arm! My arm!" I scream.

"Mommy!"<sup>4</sup>

"Shut up and come here." She pulls me by my shirt and

trying to move arm hurts. She examines my arm and look at me with a strong mug.

She slaps my face really hard calling me to scream out of agony. "Look what you made me do little girl! If you wasn't so stupid your arm wouldnt be broke, now I gotta drag you and them babies out the house!"<sup>1</sup>

"I'm telling my mommy! You broke my arm!"

"Shut up!" She screams, and goes into the living and pick up baby brother.

"Shut up little boy!" She screams in his face and she pinch him causing his cries to grow more louder.<sup>32</sup>

"Leave him alone! Your hurting him!" I shout.

How have you been though?" She ask as she places a ciggarate in her mouth, then bends over to grab a lighter. I move closer to her, and she stills doesn't notice.+

As soon as she turns around, I grab her by both of her wrist and ram her into the wall, the anger that is filled with in me is unexplainable.

"Zayn what is you doin?! Let me go!" She screams.

I press the knife againts her neck, causing her eyes to bulge out, I stare into her eyes sternly. "Why did you touch my kids Angel?" I ask.

Tears are now swelling up in her eyes, and I can sense fear, at this point I don't care about weather she lives or die, no one harms my kids. "W-what are you talking about?"

"Oh now you don't what I'm talking about?!" I wrap my arms around her neck and tighten my grip, the knife is still in my hand, the blade harshly scarring her.1

"Admit that you broke my daughter arm and shook my son."

I release my hold on her neck, so she can have the chance to give me a response. She takes a couple of breaths as she holds on to her chest.

"I didn't touch them."

"You wanna keep lying to me ma?" I place the tip of the blade on her forehead, and poke out my lip. She shivers and close her eyes as tears stream down her cheeks, I could care less about her tears.

"Zayn....I am your mother. No matter what happen good or bad you must respect me."9

I run the knife down her face, and allow it to gently scratch her, the blade is sharp, so a line of blood begins dripping.

"Your my mother, but you must respect me and my children and you didn't do that. My son is battling for his life right now, he has had three seizures in one night."

"Zay I didn't touch them babies okay, I don't even know what your talking about."

I nod my head and pull out my phone, I then go to my videos and face the phone towards her and expose the video to her. It reveals her hitting on Aabria and shaking Zeejay.<sup>5</sup>

"So you didn't touch my kids?!" I scream in her face, causing her to flinch. I hover over her and press the knife againsts her neck once more.

"Why did you do it?" I ask in a low tone. "After everything I did for you, after all the forgiving and accepting I did, you return the love by trying to kill my son?"

"Well you killed my daughter!" She abruptly shouts, rage fills my soul once I hear her response. "You killed Shane! You killed your own sister, for your own selfish reasons! You took everything away from me! You don't know how much pain I went through! I was put in a nut house, cause you caused me to lose my mind! You really thought I was gonna

put that shit behind us?! You're crazy! You killed your own sister, you killed the only one who stepped up and was actually a father towards you!"<sup>17</sup>

I wrap my arms around her neck again and slam her against the wall repeatedly. "He was a father ma?! He was a father?! He molested me for five years, but he was a father?! Huh?"

She become blue and purple in the face, so I release her and begin to shed tears, I run my hand across my face, and rest my hand on my hip. "I killed my sister on accident and I regret it everyday, but that nasty motherfucker deserve to die, and your ass deserve to die too. But I ain't gon do it." I pull out my other phone and show her the screen, revealing that I am recording. I stop the recording, and put it back in pocket.<sup>4</sup>

"I'm not gon do it, just let the killers up in CIW take care of you." I chuckle.

"Boy! I am your mother!" She cries.

"No your not....you showed me I didn't mean shit to you a long time ago. Me and my kids don't mean shit to you, so you don't mean shit to me.

"Just kill me your self, you right you never meant shit to me. I had you at seventeen years old....your daddy didn't even wanna help raise you. So I had to take care of you by myself, then Shane came along, it was either let him have his way with you, or have no way to take care of you."2

YOU'LL ALSO LIKE

The Kingpin's sister by Baabiiee\_doll

The Kingpin's sister

806K

31.4K

Whenever you hear the name Kimani Sumner in the streets

of the Bronx, her older brother, KJ's, name is spoken shortly after. Ever since she was a child she was put on to...

A Nerd and a Thug by its\_ya\_girl\_tete

A Nerd and a Thug

2.3M

88.8K

Read to find out. 

Graceful Addictions | Completed by -redrum

Graceful Addictions | Completed

535K

40.9K

The unraveling of secrets that ultimately destroy a family.

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East) by Laughing3650

Once in a Lifetime (Dave East)

1.4M

50.5K

Katalina Moretti seems like she has her life together. She has a great business, her own condo, and still in business



school all at the age of 24! She seems like she had...

ICY by Bretaughtyou

ICY

438K

23.8K

Beautiful. Head strong. Dominant. Those are all adjectives you could use to describe Isis Armon, formally known as Yuko. A victim of sex trafficking, Isis doesn't know w...

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East by TanonTales

How To Get Rich | ✓ - Dave East

749K

61K

Real Hot Girl Shxt 💰 🤪 🧐 🧨 ♂

"I see." I nod my head. "I just don't understand what my kids had to do with anything. Your really cold hearted, if you wouldve put your children first, a lot of things could have been avoided."

"I'm sorry Zayn."

"Well be so--" Before I can respond a knock is heard at the door, I walk over to it and open it, Bishop and his boy, Faze who is a cop stood in the door way.

I give them both a brotherly hug and turn back to my mother, as she stands againts the wall and stare back at me with a helpless look on her face. "As I was saying mom, be sorry while your in that cell....think about all the pain you put me through and all the love I tried to give."

I nod at Bishop, and leave out closing the door as Faze read my mother her rights. I don't feel any sympathy for her at all, it took me awhile to realize that she has never cared for me, I must accept it.

I walk down the hallway, then push the exit door open. I get to my car, and before hopping in I glance up at the sky, smiling at the sight of clouds and the bright sun shining down on me, a young girl rides pass on a bike, I then feel my sister sprit, I grin and get into my car.

With in thirty minutes I make it to the hospital, I enter my son's room to see Makiela standing over him rubbing his face.

"Hey." I announced myself, she looks over at me and slightly waves. I walk over to the both of them and wrap my arms around her small waist, then place my chin in the crook of her neck, as I stare down at my son. He has tubes hooked up to him, because he has a hard time breathing,

"We'll able to take him home soon."

"He has clots in his brain Zay....they said he may n-not make it."6

I close my eyes, and hold on to her tight. "Don't listen to them, he's gonna alright. Have faith."

"I hope your mama do some real some time for this." She

sniffles.

"She's gonna get that and then some." I simply state.

12 Months Later.

Makiela

The sun beams down on my forehead as I hold Aabria's hand and we walk through the cemetery, we look at a few tombstones until we finally find her father's.<sup>8</sup>

Jayson Abriel Washington.<sup>17</sup>

She expressed to me that part of the reason she's been acting out is because the lost of her father. She told me that all she ever wanted to do was get to know him and be able to have a fatherly daughter bond.

She stares at the nickel colored tombstone, then glances back at me and smile.

"Do you want to say something to him?" I ask nervously.

"Yeah." She nods. "I'm just trying to put my words together." She takes the small picnic blanket out of my arms and spread it out on the ground, she sits down in front of the tombstone.<sup>1</sup>

"What should I say mom?" She ask.

"Speak from your heart Bri."

She bites down on her lip, then take an deep breath, I can tell this was hard for her, just by her body language. "Hey Dad.....my birthday was yesterday, I turned eight. But it wasn't nothing really special, you don't care anyway, you never made it to any of my parties, but I forgive you for it."<sup>5</sup>

She begins to play with the leaves and rip them apart. "I love you very much, even though you never loved me. But

my mommy says always treat people right cause God will award you with blessings. I learned something else too, karma. It's when you do something bad and it comes back to you, you killed someone, so you got killed....and I hate that it happen to you, but that's how karma goes. You were never there for me, so I guess that's why God called you home, when you have kids you have to be thankful of them. Mommy say when your a parent, your main purpose is to take care of your kids."8

She begins to shed tears, but she covers up her face, cause she hates for me to see her cry."I wish you were here, but you probably wouldn't want me. But that's okay...I still love you cause-- cause your my dad." She sniffles.

I sit beside her and wrap my arm around her, then lean in to plant a soft kiss on her forehead. "It's alright, your so strong." I tell her as I wipe her tears away with my sleeve.2

"You know mom....for some reason I'm not mad at Uncle

Bishop anymore, I just hate that I'm never gonna get to know Jayson....it just hurts not being loved."6

"I love you, you know Zay loves you. He would let you burn the house down." I chuckle. "I can't bring your daddy back, and I'm sorry that he had to go out like that and in front of you, but it took me a long time to realize that we deserved much better and God gave us someone, Zayn."

"Yeah I love him...and I'm glad that he makes you happy." She smiles as she wipes a tear from her eye. "It just seems weird, cause I'm not mad that Uncle Bishop killed my dad, should I be mad." She questions.

"Yeah, but you should also forgive him and realize he didn't do it to intentionally hurt you.... your dad killed his brother, so bush wanted to get back at him but didn't handle it the right way."

"I understand mommy. I love you."

I raise my eyebrows, then giggle under my breath. "I love you too my baby."

"I'm glad that your mommy." She express.

"And i'm glad that your my baby, I love you with all of my heart, you are my first baby. I'm glad to have you." I give her a sloppy kiss.

"Eww mom get off." She laughs as she pushes me off of her.

Diamond4

"Don't cry baby, mommy is gonna be back." I coo as I place my small baby in Ms. Yolanda, my baby sitters arms.

"Ms.Yo, I promise just til the morning, I just need to go out and make enough money to get diapers and formula to last for the next two weeks ." I explain as I gently poke my babies cheek and smile.



Ms.Yolanda rolls her eyes, it's obvious that she doesn't want to be bothered with me nor my child. But she understands my situation. "Til the morning." She points at me. "And I want fifty dollars"

"I got you ma'am." After five mintues I finally leave and start to walk to my destination.

\*\*\*\*

I stand in front of a liquor store, with some other girls who are half naked and here waiting for a trick just like I am. They all chat and laugh obnoxiously.<sup>2</sup>

"There goes my baller!" One yells. "I'll see y'all hoes later." She says as the guy pulls up and she hops in his car.

I pull out a box of Newports from my purse and retrieve a ciggarate then place it between my lips and light it.

"Hey Miss." I hear a deep weird tone flowing through my

ears. I turn around to see a middle aged mexican man standing behind me with a case of beer in his hand.

I blow smoke from mouth, and check him out. He isn't my type but he looks like one of them contruction men, and everyone knows they have money. "May I help you?"

"Come find out." He gestures for me to come closer to him and I do just that. I lick my lips, while looking at him seductively making him think that I'm attracted.2

"What's your name miss?"

"Sasha, yours?" I ask, I give him a fake name because I don't trust these tricks out on the streets.

"Leo." He responds. "Your into that erotic stuff?"

"You wanna find out? It's really based upon your pockets." I

shrug

"How about you come to place."

I roll my eyes in a playful manner. "How about we do everything in your car."

I then watch reach down in his pockets and pull out a wad of cash. Nothing but hundreds and fifties catch my eye appeal. I exhale smoke from my mouth, and throw my cigarette on the ground putting it out.

"What do you want me to do for you?" I ask.

He bites on his lip as he eye rapes me up and down. He chuckles and nod his head. "I want to have a night I'll remember."2

"You got a lot of hundreds there, I'll come to your house. If

you throw me nine hundred dollars."

"Deal." He agrees. "Follow me."9

I wrap both of my arms around me since it is getting a little chilly. I trail behind him, and we make it to his old rusty pickup truck. He grunts as he put the case of beer in the back. Then he opens the passenger door for me.

I give him a salty look as I slowly get in. He slams the door and I stay put starring out the window ahead, watching people walk pass.

This car has weird smells, New car smell combined with sex and gasoline. I use my shirt to cover my nose. He finally hop inside of the car, he place the key in the ignition and starts the engine.

"So...Sasha. You from around here?" He questions as he pulls off, starting our journey to his house.

"Yeah I'm from Watts." I smile.

"Yeah yeah I got a few people I know put there." He chuckles. "How old are you?" He ask me.

"21." I tell a fib as I pull at a string that's out of the stitch on my shorts.<sup>1</sup>

He turns to me and laugh under his breath. Sounding real weird and corny, making the mood very awkward, he stares at me and I furrow my eyes then take a deep breath. I do not have a thing for annoying dudes, I just like to get the night over with. "You like rap ,like that Young Rug guy? And Biggie Smalls? How about Rich Homie Dewayne? you listen to him?"<sup>2</sup>

I fake a small laugh. "Yeah I listen to him, they all are cool lyricist. You mind keeping your eyes on the road, you are on the free way." I remind him.

He burst out laughing in a annoying manner, as if I just told

a knock em dead joke. "I appologize miss! Your so funny!"

"Your alright." I say as I fold my lips, hiding my agitation. I scratch my nose, and turn to the window. Attempting to avoid any eye contact with him.

After a thirty minute drive, we are crusing through the woods, I can hear owl's chirping and crickets chirping like no tommorow. The ride is bumpy, making the car tilt left to right. I look at the empty like area, and begin to feel uneasy.<sup>7</sup>

"So this is where your house is Leo?" I ask as I hold on to the handle on the door. To keep from flying all over the place.

"Yeah just be patient Sasha, where almost there."

We then pull up a few yards away from this small cabin, he shuts off the car and we both climb out. He grabs the beer from the back seat, I then follow him to the door step, and

watch as he unlocks the door. Once he opens it, he allows me to go in first.

I look around the menacing looking place, it's old along with dingy. But has a lot of room, I step over the empty beer cans on the floor and look at the shelf at his collection of knives. The door then slams and I jump frighten by the sound.<sup>1</sup>

"Sorry, did I scare you?" He questions.<sup>4</sup>

I rub my head full of curly hair and slightly smile. "Oh no your fine."

"Have a seat make your self comfortable."

"Okay." I say a bit shy, I sit on the raggedy couch, and observe as he takes off his jacket and begin to strip out of his clothes.

"Get undressed little lady."

"O-okay." I obey.1

\*\*\*\*

He groans as he comes to his climax, he then lays his head on my chest and giggles. "This is definitely a night to remember."

"Yep it is, you think you can give me a ride home?" I ask while I stare up at the ceiling biting on my bottom lip. His heavy body is nearly crushing me.

"Sure, let me have you do something first." He gets off of me, then rises up. I watch as he grabs a random pair of pajama pants off of the chair and put them on. He then leaves out the room and I get up quicky, then begin to put on my clothes.

As I'm putting on my bra, I see him in my peripheral vision, I



turn to him to see a pistol in his hand.

"What are you doing?"

"You can leave, but first you gotta suck on this." He says coming towards me.

"Y-your crazy." I say as I begin backing away . "I have a baby I have to get home to, So I'll just leave."

I grab my clothes and attempt to flee away but he pulls my arm throwing me on the couch, I moan from the striking pain he brought to my arm.

"Your not leaving little lady."

"I-I- I h-have to get home to my baby."

"Oops....no one never leaves here....alive." He chuckles.49

Zayn

"Come on man, say daddy." I tell my one year old son Zeejay as he sits on my lap drooling and making disturbing noises from his mouth, shaken baby syndrome led him to be autistic, so he can't talk nor can he walk straight, though babies do not start to speaking until their atleast two, Makiela and I were told that our son will never be able to speak.<sup>26</sup>

"Eat eat! Eat eat!" Zaibree runs into the living butt naked, Aabria chases her with a diaper.<sup>1</sup>

"Zaib, your gonna eat in a mintue let me change your diaper." She says as he picks her up and take her upstairs.

"You wanna say something to me man? Huh?" I ask Zeejay as I rub his head, but he just gives me a blank stare. Makiela then enter our home scanning mail, I check out her attire which is a rose pink Nike sweat suit, it's tight showing off all of her thickness.

She closes the door and leans on the wall. And stare at this certain piece of paper.

"What's wrong baby?" I pick up Zeejay and walk over to her.

"You have to pay for your mom's funeral." Was I really going to let my mother get away with nearly killing my child? Nope, but before I can even put a hit out, someone beat me to the punch. Dex, she stole 10,000 worth of jewelry from him, I heard a couple inmates shanked her with tooth brushes.<sup>29</sup>

"Ima send that straight to my Auntie, I'm not paying for it."

"Alright." She shrugs.

"How was work at Makiela's Palace?" I ask referring to her new fashion store/department where she her and employees create designs for others and sell them.

"It was good I have to design a jazzy little romper by next month for a birthday party and got another wedding couple to design for." She says as play with the curls in our son's head.

"How is your strip clubs going and the car lot?" She says referring to the second strip club I took on and the car lot I bought.

"It's going cool, I actually have something to show you, so call Erica so she can watch the kids and lets go." I instruct, as I walk away.

\*\*\*

"Don't take that blind fold off." I tell Makiela as I pull up to our destination, I've been dying to show her this surprise.<sup>1</sup>

"I'm not." She whines as she folds her arms.

I shut the engine off, then pull the keys out of its place and

put it into my pockets.

She begin to tug at the blind fold "Can I take it off now?" She ask.

"No!" I slap her hand.

"Oww." She laughs. "Fine I'll leave it on jerk."

I climb out of the car, then walk over to the passenger side to get her. I open her door and assist her out by grabbing her hand. "Let's go baby, no peeking."

I cover her eyes and she holds her hands out as if she's a zombie. With in mintues we make it to the door step, and I uncover her eyes and place a key in her hand.

"Take the blind fold off."

She does as she is told and her eyes widen along with her mouth. "Ahhhhhhhhhh!" She screams at the sight of nice size mansion. She puts her hand over her heart and I try to help her catch her balance.

The house is colored a shadow grey, and made out of strong brick. A couple trees a long with a small pool and pond surrounds the front yard. She speeds over to the side of the house , where it's a small water fall and she feels it the water with her hand.

"We need to get some cute little statues for this area right here Zayn!" She yells. "Who's house is this?!" She frowns as she puts her hand on hip.

"Our's baby, come look inside."

"It's so big!" She looks around.

"Come unlock the door girl!" I laugh.

We finally make it inside the house, and stares at the entrance, which is the living room, it is colored angel white, the floors and walls as well. Before looking around she just begins to cry and cover her eyes.

"What's wrong?" I ask as I wrap my arms around her waist.  
"You don't like it?" I playfully pout.

"I do like it! I love it!" She whines in a baby tone. "I'm just surprised that you did this, what's wrong with our house."

"Well...im gonna rent that one out and this is where are marriage is gonna start at. I don't want Bri to stay in that house, I know she needs something different and you do too. I know the floors are white and the kids are gonna make a mess, sorry."1

"No I love it." She turns around and carress my cheeks. "I'll mop the floor everyday if I have to. I love you so much, and not just because you bought a house but because....I never had anyone love me like you do and sometimes your love

is over whelming but I swear I appreciate it. Being with you is paradise."2

"I feel the same way about. I love you more though." I hold her hand as I slip my tounge between her lips. I analyze over her body and hold her close to me.

"So...we move in next week. You can start ordering furnisher tonight if you want."5

"Okay...but right now. I just wanna kiss you and love on you, so be quiet." She says in a sassy tone and we begin to kiss once more.1

\*\*\*\*

We make it back home, and see a police car in our drive way. We both rush out of the car and go inside.1



"Erica?" Makiela says as she comes in, Erica is holding Zeejay, while Aabria and Zaibree is on the couch together.

"What's going on?" I ask as I stare at the two officers in my home, I'm guessing they are detectives cause they aren't dress in the whole police fit.

"Y'all they came to talk to you about something important." Erica says in a saddened tone. "Ima go take the kids to the basement." She says.

She gestures for the kids to follow her and they walk out.

"Zayn Walton?" The female with blonde hair and ice blue eyes ask as she reach for her badge.

"That's me." I respond.

"I'm detective Weston and this is my partner Sam, do you know this young lady?" She ask as she pulls out a picture of Diamond.<sup>1</sup>

"Y-yeah...that's Diamond. I use to take care of her. Is she

okay?" I question concerned.

They both look at each other and she shakes her head as she twist her lips. "Diamond was brutally murdered a few days ago."

Makiela bust out in tears then leaves the room. I take a deep breath as my eyes water and I slowly sit on the couch and stare at the ground. I didn't like the sound of it at all it's like a piece of my soul left. Maybe if I just would've let her stayed none of this wouldn't have occurred.<sup>10</sup>

"What happen?"

"We think she was with a john, he stabbed three times in the stomik and shot her in the head. We found her in a alley."<sup>13</sup>

"Wow...I can't believe this shit." I say speechless. After Diamond left I had no contact with her. Her phone was off, couldn't find her on the streets but I figured she pop up somewhere.

"This is her two month old daughter Zaria." A picture of baby girl is shown to me and I only see a reflection of my self. I look away from the picture and rub my eyes.3

"A friend of Diamond's said that your possibly her father."

"I can believe that." I nod as I bite down on my lip. "Where is she now?"

"In the states custody. I am so sorry for your loss, that's why we want you to take a DNA test because Zaria needs a home and it would be great for her to have a father."

"Of course, of course." I sniffle as I stand. "I'm all for it, I'm pretty sure she's already mine." I admit.8

\*\*\*\*

I look down at my baby girl Zaria Leyana

Walton, as she lays in my arms. She is indeed mine. She looks like her mother but is more of my identical twin. She has round coffee bean colored eyes, along with a caramel complexion and a head full of curly hair.1

I am proud that Diamond gave her my sister's name as her middle name. I guess she knew how much my sister meant to me, I can appreciate it.2

Zaria smiles at showing me a gummy smile.

"That's right ma ma, smile." I grin at her as I rub her head.

"Daddy got you baby. You smiling at the angels?" I ask as she looks straight ahead with a wide smile on her face, it's always spoken that new borns and infants can see spirits that others can't see.3

"Your mommy talking to you? You and mommy talking huh? Say daddy got me mama, I'm gonna be ooootttayyy." I say in

a babyish voice as I lean down and kiss her forehead.8

Makiela

I stare in the full length mirror at myself as I smile proudly at my wedding dress, my whole entire look matter fact. I am wearing a three thousand dollar bridal dress, a jewel embellished laced up.1

That is a cream ivory color, with all type of bows and diamond rhinestones attached to. My hair is pinned up in pretty bun, with a flower head band and with a few diamonds on it "Y'all think I look cute?" I ask Jaymee and my mother.

"I think you look like a beautiful queen baby. Zayn is going to love it." My mother tels .

"I agree." Says Jaymee.

"Well....I think I'm ready." I say, but my cell phone begins to ring. I pick it up and the caller identification reveals to me that it is Zayn, I quickly answer.

"Hello?"

"Hey." He says. "What you doing?"

"In the dressing room getting ready, what you doing baby?" I ask, my voice is nearly shaking.

He chuckles and I can hear the nervousness in his voice.  
"Standing on the alter waiting for you. Before it's official, I wanted to pray. If that's okay with you."<sup>12</sup>

"Im cool with it baby, let's pray." I smile, and begin to get the water works as I bow my head down.

"God..." He starts off. "I come to you in the lord Jesus name

and ask for you to make this day special for the both of us. Please allow us to have long lasting marriage, please give us the strength to be able to carry the load even when it's too heavy. Guide us and be here for us all the way through like I know you will. Don't let's us grow apart, please let this last last forever between Makiela and I, and our beautiful children. In Jesus name, amen and amen."14

"Amen." I wipe a tear from.

"You ready?" He ask.

"I'm ready baby, I'm coming out now." I sniffle.

"I can't wait, I love you." He says.

"I love you too." I hang up the phone and both my mother and Jaymee smiles.

"Y'all so extra, but it's cute." Jaymee says.1

I laugh it and wipe my tears with a kleenex.. "I'm ready."

My mother opens the door, my father is standing out side of it waiting to walk me down the aisle. He hands me my bouquet of flowers, and hook his arm to mine.

"You look beautiful baby." He whispers to me as we begin to walk

"Thank you daddy." I smile.

" For you I'd give a lifetime of stability

Anything you want of me

Nothing is impossible

For you there are no words or ways to show my love

Or all the thoughts I'm thinking of

Cause this life is no good alone

Since we've become one



I've made a change

Everything I do now makes sense

All roads end

All I do is for you."1

For you By Kenny Lattimore plays as I strut down the aisle, after a few moments I make it to the alter and stand in front of my husband to be. I fix the collar on his text and stare in his almond colored eyes as I smile.6

"Are you two ready say vows?" The preacher ask.

"Of course, I want him to go first." I respond.

Zayn holds my hand as hold a nervous grin on his face, then he takes a deep breath. "Makiela Audrey Walton, I love you with all of my heart and every piece of my soul. Through you and our children I learned how to be a better man, you taught me many things. And while others judge me you understood my struggle and pain, and when I was dealing

with battles you gave me space but you still helped me through it, and refuse to give up. And you are appreciated for everything have done, from giving me children, to saying yes to be wife. I vow to never put anyone before you and our family, I vow to you that I am 100% a changed man and I will never want to be the reason you cry. I vow that I will always be here for you mentally, physically, verbally....only death can tear us apart. R.Kelly once said "when a woman is fed up, there you ain't nothing you can do about it." But I seen you be fed up before, but I also seen you make things rught. I just vow to love you and be the best husband that I can be."2

His words brings me to tears, I stare at the ground then back at him. "Zayn....I love you....so much. There is nothing I wouldn't do for you, I can't climb a mountain or swim a sea but anything you need you will always find in me. You are everything a man and father should be, before you even had kids of your own, you raised my daughter and let her know that she does have a father. And that really stole both of our hearts. I am estatic to be your wife, you are a charmer and most importantly you are my king. I worship the ground you walk on. I vow to be yours and only your, I vow to be

submissive and be here for you anytime you need me. I vow to dedicate my time to our children and you. Nicole Wray once said "Love songs never come true." But I know a few that did. I use to think love wasn't for me, I use to think I would never find man. I convinced myself that this day would never happen....I told myself that a faithful and loving marriage doesn't exists in my world, but a thug changed my mind."16

I smile and everyone laughs at my statement.

"I love you Zayn."

The preacher grins, then turns to Zayn. "Zayn do you wish for Makiela to be happily wedded wife."

"I do." He responds.

Before he can ask me I blurt out, I speak. "I do want to him to my husband! I do! I do so much!"5

Everyone laughs once more and Bishop comes with our ring. Zayn bends down and grab the diamond wedding ring and slides it on my finger.

"You may kiss your bride."

We both share a passionate kiss and everyone cheers. Aabria runs up to us and hug us tight.

"I'm proud of the two of you."

Zayn picks her up and rubs her back, then turns to me. "I love you."

"I love you too." I then throw my flowers in the air so someone can catch it.

THE END!

Daliy New African novels [Download Here](#)

[www.ebooksTeach.com](http://www.ebooksTeach.com)